

201 The Truth...

Lu Qiang went back to his room and sat on the edge of the bed. He looked helpless and didn't know what to do. He sat there for a long time while burying his face in his palms and leaning down towards the floor. After some time, there was a knock on the door. Lu Qiang stood up and went to open the door.

He opened it just to see Jiang Yang was standing in front of him. Lu Qiang let him in. When he was about to close the door, someone came again. This time it was Lu Feng. Lu Feng and Jiang Yang both couldn't sleep to think about Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan. Lu Feng came inside too and Lu Qiang closed the door.

Both noticed Lu Qiang was not in good condition. His hair was messy and he looked disturbed, even though he tried to hide from showing it on his face. Lu Feng and Jiang Yang sat on the couch while Lu Qiang followed them too and sat in the chair in front of a couch.

"I think my sister did what she should not", said Jiang Yang but Lu Qiang didn't say anything and sat in his seat quietly.

"It was not only her fault. He made her do it." Lu Feng said with not having sympathy on his face for Lu Qiang. Lu Feng frowned and said again, "I told you not to do anything that can hurt her but you never listen to anyone." Lu Qiang continued listening to what Lu Feng was saying as he thought of himself as a guilty one.

"No Lu Feng. It was not only his fault. I know my sister. She thinks about everything a lot and makes her own conclusions and decisions. I am sure she didn't give him a chance to explain anything. If she had been a little patient and listen to him calmly, things wouldn't have gone this far." Jiang Yang said as he could imagine what might have happened between Lu Qiang and his sister.

“So are you saying, it’s all her fault.” Lu Feng asked as he was not happy to hear what Jiang Yang said.

“No. I said it was not only his fault alone. Moreover, conditions arise which only worsened the situation more and before he could solve anything, those conditions affected Yuyan greatly. So it was all to be blamed on conditions around them.” Jiang replied after taking everything into consideration.

“Hmm! Right! Actually, it was the fault of that woman. I should have known, she might do something to create trouble as it’s her favorite thing to do.” Lu Feng said and ran his hand through his hair as he was frustrated to remember about his mother.

When Lu Feng said it, Jiang Yang again looked at him in surprise to know why Lu Feng talked like this about his own mother, but he didn’t ask as it was a time to concentrate on Lu Qiang and his sister while Lu Qiang was still sitting quietly.

“So what is your plan now Lu Qiang?” Jiang Yang asked.

“There is no plan now. I am not going to do anything just let the things flow like this”, Lu Qiang replied while being helpless in front of the situation.

“How can you say this Lu Qiang. You should do something as she is hurt and it is all because of you.” Lu Feng was upset with Lu Qiang and couldn’t hold back himself. Lu Qiang too didn’t reply to him back as he accepted whatever Lu Feng said.

“Right now she is not in a stable state of her mind but till tomorrow she would be alright. You have to be calm too Lu Qiang. I know her, she must be crying for whatever she said to you and I know, what she might have said to you. It’s high time to make her realize, what she thinks about herself is not right and Lu Qiang, I hope you won’t give on trying.”

Lu Qiang finally reacted to what Jiang Yang said and looked at him. “Whatever she is feeling right now, it’s all my fault. I made her think about herself in that way. I won’t give up on her ever even if she pushed me away thousands of times. I just want to give her some space. Pushing things too much can

worsen the situation. Let her be without any kind of pressure.” Lu Qiang said it and leaned back in a couch to rest in it.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang nodded to what Lu Qiang said. Jiang Yang wanted to go to see his sister but he didn't. This time he preferred to let her think about everything in her own way and to decide what she wanted, on her own.

The next morning, It was a day of celebration. All went for breakfast but Lu Qiang. He wanted to give her time alone while being away from her so that she won't feel awkward or pressurized by his presence. Lu Feng and Jiang Yang too supported him for what he decided and went for breakfast without him.

Jiang Yuyan was with Lu Bao, Lu Lian, and Wang Shu. she saw her brother and Lu Feng coming for breakfast but Lu Qiang was not there. The place was filled with all the guests invited by the Wang family from distant cities. The whole place was noisy with funny or serious conversations between the guests. All were busy in their talk while eating a tasty breakfast but Jiang Yuyan was calm and her eyes were seeking for Lu Qiang.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang went to her and sat beside her for breakfast. It was clear for both of them to understand she was searching for Lu Qiang but both behaved normally as showing they didn't know anything about Lu Qiang or anything about what happened between her and Lu Qiang last night.

Jiang Yuyan was trying to eat somehow as she felt her chest was heavy and it was difficult to breathe normally. Her throat felt dry and choked too and she felt anxious. She managed to handle herself as she didn't want others to notice anything odd.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang knew her condition but both showed they didn't notice anything and both were busy while talking with Lu sisters and Wang Shu. suddenly Zhi Ruo came for breakfast too and she sat at the same table as them.

Zhi Ruo noticed, Lu Qiang was not there for breakfast and Jiang Yuyan looked upset. She thought about something and said, “Yesterday, I somehow managed to come here. I thought

I wouldn't be able to make it and parents would have scolded me for it.”

“Why? But you came with brother Lu Qiang so what was difficult to not be able to come here?” Wang Shu asked as she didn't like the thought that Lu Qiang came with her instead of Jiang Yang. Upon hearing it, Lu Sisters looked at Zhi Ruo to know about it. Jiang Yuyan pretended to not hear it and continued the breakfast while Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were ready to see Jiang Yuyan's reaction once she heard the truth from Zhi Ruo.

Zhi Ruo sighed and said with a laugh, “Haha! Who said I came with Lu Qiang. I was busy the whole day with my personal stuff and somehow managed to get flight tickets of economy class as business class was full. I didn't know Lu Qiang was traveling on the same flight or I would have asked him to book one for me too.”

“Then how you came with brother Lu Qiang here?” Lu Bao asked curiously.

I happened to see him at the airport when I was waiting for a cab. We saw each other there. As I was coming to the same place he helped me by giving me a lift.

All girls were surprised to hear it and realized how wrong they were, especially Jiang Yuyan. Zhi Ruo looked at Jiang Yuyan and saw how her expressions changed. Zhi Ruo was glad to see, she achieved what she wanted to.

It was not hard for the talented person like her to guess the situation between Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan and somewhere she felt bad as she was the reason for all of it. She wanted to tell Jiang Yuyan indirectly about her and Lu Qiang because by sensing the current situation, she understood, Lu Qiang was not able to tell her the truth.

Zhi Ruo finished her breakfast soon and said bye to everyone. Lu sisters and Wang Shu looked at her retreating back and Lu Bao said, “Where did she keep going all the time. We all are here but she is always going out somewhere. In Lu Mansion too. She was not home most of the time and from what I know, she didn't even go to Lu Corporation even once.

Jiang Yuyan, Jiang Yang and Lu Feng heard all of these. Jiang Yuyan was totally silent with no expression on her face. Jiang Yang and Lu Feng looked at her and felt glad, she finally heard a truth. They were just hoping to pass all this soon and to see her happy again with Lu Qiang.

The whole day passed by until it was evening and the time of the ring ceremony. During this time from morning to evening, Jiang Yuyan didn't see Lu Qiang not even during lunch. Her heart was beating faster to think if he was fine. She felt worried about him and wanted to see him.

202 Regret....

It was not like Jiang Yuyan didn't trust Lu Qiang. She trusted him more than anyone, she could ever trust, apart from her brother. The reason she hurt him was when she saw Zhi Ruo and heard the word about her marriage with Lu Qiang, she felt bad. She was upset and jealous too. When she saw, Lu Qiang came with her to city S, she again felt bad but she gave a thought about it.

Jiang Yuyan was thinking about so many things since she was in Jiang residence for few days, but when she saw Lu Qiang and Zhi Ruo together again and the way Lu Qiang ignored her, she came to a conclusion. She was not jealous or upset. Instead, she was trying to be rational. She found Zhi Ruo worthy of Lu Qiang and thought he could be happy with her.

Jiang Yuyan thought about lacking things in herself and came to the conclusion that she should distance herself from Lu Qiang, so he can go on another way. She realized, she might not be able to give him all the happiness in the life that any man would desire for. All this time he was being patient with her but it was enough for her at the moment as she tried her best till now. she didn't want him to wait for her more as he already waited for her long enough.

She thought he deserves to be happy as he always worked hard for others and never had anything for himself or expect anything in return. She decided to be harsh with him and distance herself from him which might lead his way to Zhi Ruo, but what she did was useless when she heard Zhi Ruo.

Since breakfast, Jiang Yuyan didn't see him and as the time passed by she felt restless. She decided to go and see if Lu Qiang was fine. She stepped out of her room and she was about to step towards Lu Qiang's room, Lu sisters and Wang Shu came out of their rooms and they saw Jiang Yuyan. They called her and took her with them as Wang Shu needed help with her dress. Jiang Yuyan couldn't say no as they requested her a lot and went with them.

When Jiang Yuyan came out from Wang Shu's room, she again decided to go to Lu Qiang's room. When she knocked on the door, there was no response. The man in the hotel staff was passing by from there. When he saw her, he told her that Lu Qiang left the room just a while ago and went somewhere. She cursed herself for going with the girls instead of going to Lu Qiang. She was feeling even more anxious and couldn't understand what to do.

She tried to call him but the call was not connecting. She finally went to her brother's room. Jiang Yang opened the door and saw her standing in front of his room, with a long face. He let her in and asked, "You are not ready yet? The ring ceremony will start soon. Get ready fast."

She didn't respond to this and asked, "Do you know where is Lu Qiang?"

"Why? Where did he go? Is he not in his room?" Jiang Yang replied casually as it was not a big deal for him. Jiang Yang understood why his sister came to him when he saw her in front of his room's door but he didn't want to answer her anything related to Lu Qiang. He wanted her to suffer for a while, with a pain of not being able to see him.

"No, he is not in his room and since last night I haven't seen him." Jiang Yuyan said with a worried expression on her face.

"Haaa, sis! Don't worry. He must be somewhere in the hotel. He is not a kid to look after him." Jiang Yang replied without giving attention to her worry about Lu Qiang and signaled her to sit in the chair while he was going through his bag to take out the clothes which he was going to wear for the function.

Jiang Yuyan sat in the chair and said, "I know brother but I am still worried about him as I hurt him last night"

"It's not the first time you guys fought so relax. He will be back to you soon", Jiang Yang said while putting his suit on the bed and sat on its edge to talk to her.

"I think, I did a mistake", Jiang Yuyan said while feeling guilty about what she did with Lu Qiang.

“What mistake?” Jiang Yang asked curiously even though he knew what it was but he wanted to hear it from her.

“I..I thought, he would be more happy with Zhi Ruo so I said, I don’t love him and said to go to her,” she replied hesitantly.

“Hmm! But why did you do that and why did you think, he won’t be happy with you? Jiang Yang asked calmly while being ready to hear her explanation.

“You know better, what’s the problem with me, brother. How long can I keep him waiting, so I thought it would be better for him to move ahead in his life. Moreover, I am not confident about myself. I don’t know, if I would be able to give him that thing, ever. Also, Zhi Ruo seems nice girl so I thought she suits him.” Jiang Yuyan said everything in one breath, whatever she felt right at the moment when she hurt Lu Qiang.

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh and said calmly, “If he wanted only that one thing in his life, he wouldn’t have been waiting for you like crazy, when he had so many women offering themselves to him. Also, see the change in yourself since when he came into your life. That day is not far when you will come out of your fears. To bring these changes in you, he did a lot and now you can’t let go of his efforts in vain.”

“Hmm! You are right”, Jiang Yuyan nodded and said while processing the words of her brother in her mind.

“Answer me one thing honestly,” Jiang Yang asked with a serious expression on his face.

“What?”, Jiang Yuyan asked curiously to see her brother’s serious expressions.

“Do you really want him to leave you and go to someone else? Can you really bear to see him with another woman?”, Jiang Yang asked while staring in her eyes.

When she heard him saying this, curious expressions on her face changed to a sad one and she said, “I...I can’t. I can’t live without him” and tears rolled down from her eyes as to think about Lu Qiang leaving her.

“Then, what was the point of doing all that useless talk with him last night?” Jiang Yang was serious and he talked a bit

harshly with her to make her understand how wrong she was.

“I..I thought, as...long as... it can make him happy. I would be fine” she replied while wiping the tears from her face.

Jiang Yang stood up from his place and went to her. He patted her head and said, “Both of your happiness is in being together, not in being apart from each other. Understood?” and passed her tissue paper to wipe her tears.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and asked, “What should I do now? Where is he? I want to see him.”

“First get ready. He will come to attend the ring ceremony so you can see him there, even if he is not in his room at the moment.” Jiang Yang said as he went back to the bed and picked up his suit from the bed.

“Hmm! Okay!” She stepped towards the door but suddenly stopped and came back to her brother and hugged him.

“What happened now?” he asked as being startled by her sudden hug.

“I am worried. I want everything like before between me and him. Is it possible?”, her eyes were moist and she looked like on the verge of crying more.

Jiang Yang patted her head and said, “Nothing has changed between both of you. It’s just a small turn which will pass by soon. So don’t worry.”

Jiang Yuyan lifted her head to look at him and asked to assure herself again, “Really?” She looked like a lost puppy who was seeking shelter and her brother was the one for her.

Jiang Yang smiled too look at her and said, “Hmm! Trust me.” His words were comforting for her. She smiled too, said thank you, brother, and left to her room.

As Jiang Yuyan went to her room, Jiang Yang got ready and went to Lu Feng’s room. Lu Feng was not ready and was in a messy condition. Upon seeing him like this, Jiang Yang asked, “Are you planning to send me there alone to get bored?”

Lu Feng lied down lazily on the couch and said, “You know, I don’t like to attend these functions. I will come when it is

about to end.”

“Just as you did on the day of your grandparent’s wedding anniversary. By the way, how many packets of cigarettes are you going to empty out while waiting for this function to end?”

Lu Feng looked at him in surprise and asked, “How....”

“You are my darling and I know everything about you.” Jiang Yang answered before Lu Feng could complete his question.

“You and your ‘I know you’ habit,” Lu Feng said and got up from the couch to get ready as he knew, Jiang Yang won’t let him be in the room like this.

203 Shocked....

Jiang Yuyan went to her room to get ready for the function and in the anticipation of meeting Lu Qiang there. She wore a scarlet A-line evening full-length dress with a high neck and open V-back with a bow just below it. It was made up of satin, completing the glamorous picture perfect look. A simple diamond tops in ears and a diamond bracelet in one hand with a black color clutch. Hair parted to one side and kept open with just a light makeup on the face. She sprinkled a light perfume on her wrists and on the back of the neck too and before leaving her room, she once again checked herself to see if everything was fine.

She wore matching red sandals and as she was ready to go out, someone knocked on the door. She opened the door and saw, her brother was standing outside of her room while Lu Feng was standing a few steps away while facing his back to them as ready to go ahead but stopped to wait for Jiang Yuyan.

“woohoo, sis! You are looking just wow. Are you planning to kill my friend with your beauty?” Jiang Yang said while observing Jiang Yuyan from head to toe. She looked very beautiful and elegant lady, for whom any man could get head over heels. Upon hearing Jiang Yang’s words, Lu Feng turned to look at her. When he saw her, his heart started to beat faster and he couldn’t help but stare at her. Jiang Yang looked at him and asked, “Isn’t my sister is looking too beautiful today.”

Lu Feng immediately averted his sight from her to look at Jiang Yang and said, “She always looks pretty.” Then he turned around and said, “We are getting late, let’s go.” and led the way. Upon hearing these two, Jiang Yuyan smiled a little and followed them in anticipation to meet Lu Qiang.

They reached to the party hall. It was full of so many guests and all family members were already present there. Jiang Yuyan looked for Lu Qiang but she was not able to find him. Jiang Yang and Lu Feng were aware of her situation. “Don’t worry he would be here soon.” suddenly Lu Feng spoke as he

felt bad to see her sad face. “Lu Feng is right. He would be here soon. He must be busy with something,” said Jiang Yang.

“Hmm!” Jiang Yuyan nodded. Just then they heard a voice. “You are looking beautiful Jiang Yuyan.” They looked in the direction of the voice, that was Ming Rusheng. He too came to attend the ring ceremony but alone and not with his family. Wang Zhilan was Elder Lu Huan’s daughter so it was an obvious thing that nobody from Ming Family would come to attend this function. As Ming family shared a good relation with Wang family so someone from the Ming family had to come so they preferred to send Ming Rusheng instead of someone elder from the family.

Ming Rusheng was holding a wine glass in his hands and stepped towards Jiang Yuyan. All three looked at him. He smiled to see them but his eyes were paying more attention to Jiang Yuyan. Lu Feng frowned to look at him but couldn’t do anything as Ming Rusheng was a guest. Suddenly, a small figure came and stood up in between Jiang Yuyan and Ming Rusheng.

Lu Lijun was with one of his cousins who were of the same age as him. When he saw Ming Rusheng, he came to Jiang Yuyan. He never liked Ming Rusheng even if they never meet each other that much.

“Where is the one more bodyguard of Yuyan from Lu family?” Ming Rusheng was referring to Lu Qiang. What he said, was annoying for them but nobody said anything. Lu Feng almost felt like to hit him but controlled himself.

“Jiang Yuyan! Her name is Jiang Yuyan,” said Lu Lijun while staring into Ming Rusheng’s eyes.

Ming Rusheng smiled a little and said, “I know but as you people call her like this so I thought to try it once.”

“It’s only for the people close to her.” Lu Lijun replied with his usual cold voice which made him look like Lu Qiang.

“Hmm! You all seem to be very close to her, Lu Lijun.” Ming Rusheng said while carrying the same smile on his face.

“You don’t have to know about it. Also, as you have tried saying her Yuyan once, now you can call her Jiang Yuyan.” Lu Lijun said with a cold face without paying attention to what Ming Rusheng said.

“Ohkay! My bad. Jiang Yuyan! Fine?” Ming Rusheng replied.

The ring ceremony was about to start but still, there was no sign of Lu Qiang. Jiang Yuyan’s face was becoming sadder as the time passed by and also no one knew where he went. As the ceremony started, Lu Qiang arrived in the hall. He was wearing a black tuxedo and he was the center of attraction for everyone.

Jiang Yuyan gave out a sigh of relief to see him. Soon he was surrounded by the people in the hall, to think of it as a great opportunity to talk with president Lu. Lu Qiang was talking to them instead of coming to his friends as they were few important and respected people in the business world.

The ring ceremony started. Wang Peng and his beautiful fiancée were on the stage to exchange the rings. Everyone was busy to look at the beautiful couple on the stage while Jiang Yuyan’s eyes were following the direction of Lu Qiang and Ming Rusheng’s eyes were following Jiang Yuyan. He noticed her looking at Lu Qiang and felt a bit jealous but still couldn’t stop himself from looking at her.

Soon the ring ceremony finished. Suddenly, Zhi Ruo came to Lu Qiang with panicked expressions on her face. Lu Qiang looked at her and without saying a single word by her, he followed her. Jiang Yuyan saw it. She excused herself and followed them too. Jiang Yang and Lu Feng had to go to Wang Peng as he called them and Lu Lijun was busy with his cousin. Ming Rusheng too followed Jiang Yuyan in a while.

Jiang Yuyan went out of the hall towards the corridor but no one was there. It was hard for her to walk faster as she was wearing a full-length dress, almost touching to the floor. She had to walk by lifting her dress up a little with her hands. She tried to search for Lu Qiang by searching the whole corridor but Lu Qiang was nowhere to be seen.

Jiang Yuyan felt frustrated and tears rolled down from her eyes. She was waiting to see Lu Qiang since morning and when she finally saw him and wanted to talk to him, he disappeared again. Jiang Yuyan gave up and stood up there with the support of a wall to her back with her eyes closed like feeling helpless. She tried to stop her tears but she was not able to do so.

Suddenly she heard a voice. "Use it." She opened her eyes just to see a white handkerchief in front of her eyes and a man who was offering it to her. She didn't accept the handkerchief and said, "No Thank you. I am fine, Ming Rusheng."

"I know you are fine but using it, is not going to hurt you, so take it." Ming Rusheng said while still holding a handkerchief in front of her. She finally accepted it and wiped her tears with it. When she was wiping her tears, Ming Rusheng suddenly noticed a strand of hair hanging near her cheek, separating from her neatly arranged hair.

Ming Rusheng didn't think for second and tucked that hair strand behind her ear. This sudden move from Ming Rusheng startled her but before she could react or say something, a man came and pulled her towards him. He didn't stop by just pulling her towards him but he kissed her too in front of Ming Rusheng.

This sudden appearance of someone and his action shocked Jiang Yuyan but it didn't take her much time to realize who it was. That kiss, she knew the person, her man, Lu Qiang. She didn't resist and let him kiss her. Ming Rusheng stepped back to see this and just then Lu Qiang parted away from her lips to look at Ming Rusheng but didn't say a single word. Ming Rusheng turned around and left.

Lu Qiang let go of Jiang Yuyan and left without saying anything to her or looking at her. This reaction from Lu Qiang was shocking for her. When he kissed her in front of Ming Rusheng without thinking for a moment, she thought everything was fine between both of them but when he left without saying a single word to her, it broke her heart. She didn't know what to do and stood rooted in her place while

looking at Lu Qiang's retreating back until he disappeared from her sight.

She felt like to cry and again tears rolled down from her eyes. She realized it was her mistake so she has to apologize first. She collected herself and went in the direction of the corridor, where he went. That was the end of the corridor and there was a lawn in front of it. She moved her sight in all the corners of the lawn. When she thought, there was no one, she saw a figure in a black suit, entering the corridor on the other side of the lawn. She recognized, that was Lu Qiang and she ran in a hurry across the lawn to catch him.

That day, the atmosphere was cloudy and looked like it was going to be raining soon. The wind was blowing and it was hard for her to run while holding her long and heavy dress in her both hands. She managed somehow and reached to the corridor. She ran inside at the same pace until she could see him.

After running for a while, she saw the shadows at the turn in the corridor but it was not clear as that place was a bit dark. She stopped and stepped forward slowly in the direction of shadows. She was scared a little as it was dark and she could only see, nothing but the shadows. As she went ahead, she saw a man and a woman were kissing and looked like a man was a bit forceful on a girl.

Jiang Yuyan stepped further and saw the girl was Zhi Ruo. Her heart skipped a bit to see her with a man in a black suit. She stepped back in a shock saying "Lu Qiang" and by mistake touched a huge vase placed there beside the wall in a small stand, that made it fall on the ground and break into pieces.

204 Kiss..

Upon hearing a sound of a vase falling on the ground and broken into pieces, the man and Zhi Ruo turned to look at it. Jiang Yuyan was standing there in shock with tears rolling down from her eyes. It was dark there but when the man turned and looked at Jiang Yuyan, she could see his face and she was shocked again because that was not Lu Qiang.

She was crying and didn't know what to do because the shock of thinking, that Lu Qiang was actually kissing someone else was too much for her to bear with.

That man was as handsome as Lu Qiang and looked royal as he was someone powerful person too. Deep sea blue color eyes, neatly combed golden brown hair, sharp nose with the perfectly carved jawline and tall with majestic physic which looked perfect in his black tuxedo.

The man was holding Zhi Ruo's hand but as he saw Jiang Yuyan, he let go of it. Zhi Ruo immediately ran towards Jiang Yuyan in a hurry and asked with a worried expression on her face as to see Jiang Yuyan crying, "Are you fine? Did you hurt yourself somewhere?"

Jiang Yuyan was not able to process what Zhi Ruo was asking her. She was crying and sobbing with her eyes closed. She could only say one thing with her trembling voice "Lu Qiang"

Zhi Ruo heard it and said, "Lu Qiang? He was talking to me sometime before and I think he went to his room."

Upon hearing it Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes to look at Zhi Ruo and asked to make sure, "His room?" Zhi Ruo nodded to look into her eyes to assure her again.

Jiang Yuyan didn't wait for a moment and turn to run in the direction of the lawn to go back to the hotel rooms. When she reached the lawn, it was raining. She didn't think for a moment to enter the lawn as if she couldn't see, it was raining and that too heavily.

She grabbed her dress in her both hands tightly to lift it up as it could help her to run faster while the wind was crushing her body. She didn't want to stop because of the rain and the harshly blowing wind as she had only one thing in her mind and that was, to see Lu Qiang, whatever it takes. She was never this desperate to do anything in her life, as desperate as she felt at that moment.

Jiang Yuyan crossed the lawn somehow, entered the corridor in drenched condition and ran to the lift to go to the floor of their rooms. Thankfully, other than a few people from the hotel staff, no one was around as everyone was busy in a function in the hotel. Someone asked if she needed something but she ignored like she didn't hear anything and entered the empty lift.

She was soaked in rain but was not feeling anything. She was anxious and continuously repeating Lu Qiang's name in her mind. As the lift stopped at her desired floor, she came out in a hurry and straight strode towards Lu Qiang's room. She stopped in front of his room's door while breathing heavily as she came running there.

Jiang Yuyan couldn't call his name as she was out of breath because of running, She didn't wait for a moment and knocked on the door loudly. She kept knocking continuously till Lu Qiang opened the door.

When Lu Qiang opened the door, he was surprised to her soaked and in a messy condition but before he could react or ask anything she hugged him tightly with her hands circled around his waist and started to cry. Lu Qiang too hugged her back and waited for her to calm down. She looked at him and said while crying, "I..I am sorry...Lu Qiang!"

Lu Qiang let her be like that and tugged the wet hair strand, stuck to her face behind her ears and asked, "What for?"

"For hurting you by saying mean things." Jiang Yuyan replied while tears were still rolling down from her eyes.

"I was not hurt. Instead, I should say sorry for hurting you." Lu Qiang said calmly while both were still standing in a door surrounding in each other's arms.

Lu Qiang took her inside the room and closed the door. He noticed she was soaked in a rain and said, “Why are you soaked in the rain?” Jiang Yuyan was just staring at his face all the time as she didn’t want to miss to see him even for a single moment. She replied while looking into his eyes, “I was searching for you.”

“Hmm! But you should take care of yourself first. I am always around you.” Lu Qiang said and smiled a little.

“I was scared that you might leave me as I hurt you.” Jiang Yuyan replied while not breaking eye contact with him.

“I won’t ever. Even if you asked me to. Now let’s go and change your clothes. You might catch a cold.” Lu Qiang said as he let go of her from his embrace and was ready to go to the bathroom to make her have a shower first and to change her clothes. Just he moved one step away, Jiang Yuyan held his hand to stop him. He turned to look at her and was about to ask what happened, Jiang Yuyan stepped forward and kissed him.

Her action startled him and he stood frozen on his place. She started to suck and nibble his lips just as Lu Qiang did with her every time. Lu Qiang too started to respond to her kiss but he let her take control over him and let her do it in her way.

Jiang Yuyan circled her arms around his neck and kissed him with all her might. She was shorter than him so she had to kiss while standing on her toes. Lu Qiang circled his arms around her waist tightly as almost carrying her weight in his arms which helped her to stand easily on her toes.

205 Accepting Him..

Jiang Yuyan and her way of kissing was getting passionate and looked like she was ready to devour him completely. That shy and hesitant Jiang Yuyan was nowhere to be seen. She was passionate demanding and dominating. Most of the time it was Lu Qiang who dominate the kiss and always went for her upper lip while she had to satisfy herself with his lower lip but this time she was not giving him chance to dominate her.

Jiang Yuyan enjoyed assaulting his top lip with the turn of his lower lip in between. She was pulling out his lips with her teeth and she was biting him too as she didn't care if it hurt him.

This new passionate side of Jiang Yuyan was a surprising thing for Lu Qiang. He liked it and wanted it even more. He too responded to her passionately and both were tasting each other's sweetness. They were moving on the floor with synchronized movements of their feet. While moving around, immersed in their intense kiss, they forgot there could be obstacles in the room to stop them from moving on the floor.

There was a couch behind Lu Qiang. As Jiang Yuyan pushed him further back, both fell on the couch with Jiang Yuyan on top of him. This sudden falling on the couch didn't stop them, instead, it was a good opportunity for Jiang Yuyan to take control over him as she didn't have to tiptoe to kiss him.

Both were lying on the couch with Lu Qiang's feet resting on the floor and hers in the air as she was on top of him. they looked at each other with their lustful gazes and kissed again as they understood what they want, just by looking into each other's eyes.

Jiang Yuyan took initiative and slid her tongue in his mouth. Lu Qiang was waiting for this and waited for her to do it. She started to explore his tongue while tasting his sweetness. Both of their tongues were dancing in a sink with saliva showing up around their lips to make them drenched into it. with the sound

of rain, only the sounds of her soft moaning and their heavy breathing were there with growling sound from Lu Qiang's throat in between.

Lu Qiang wanted to take control over her but she didn't let him. His right hand was moving along her back to her bottom and the other one was buried in her wet hair on the back side of the head. Both her hands were running through his hair with her whole body weight on him. She pulled his lower lip with her teeth roughly which sent a current through his spine to make him even more aroused. He growled and he couldn't help but tightened his grip around her waist to press her against his lower body part which she could feel and allowed him to do it.

Both were breathless but didn't want to stop. They parted away for a moment just to breathe and kissed again. Lu Qiang held her tightly at the waist and turned into the couch to be on top of her. It was a limit for his patience to stop himself from devouring her completely.

Because of her wet clothes, his clothes were wet too. He realized he had to remove her clothes or she might catch a cold and said, "Let's remove these first. As she nodded, Lu Qiang helped her to sit on the couch because it was difficult to remove her long dress while lying down in it.

She stood up and Lu Qiang helped her to remove her dress which fell on the floor in her feet. She was in two small pieces of clothes, standing in front of Lu Qiang whose eyes didn't stop staring at her curvy and beautiful inviting body for a single moment.

Jiang Yuyan didn't look shy this time, instead, she looked confident and stared into his eyes without blinking an eye, allowing him to take a look at her to his heart content. Lu Qiang noticed this change in her and took it as her approval for him to go ahead. Lu Qiang looked at her breast and wanted to remove that tiny piece of clothing but he averted his sight from it and looked at her face.

Jiang Yuyan knew he was being considerate for her sake, again. It was a situation when men often lose control and do

the things they want but Lu Qiang never forgot his and her limits. Jiang Yuyan loved him but respected him for this, even more.

She stepped out of the dress which was lying on the floor, surrounding her feet. She held his right hand and put it on the left side of her chest on her left bosom. Lu Qiang startled with what she did. He never expected her to do it. He continued staring into her eyes blankly and said, “You don’t have to do this.”

As Lu Qiang said it, he was ready to retreat his hand but Jiang Yuyan held it tightly to not let him do it. “See, now my body is not reluctant to your touch, on my chest. You can feel my heart beats too and you can also feel that my heart is calm, even if you touched me here. I am not anxious or scared, Lu Qiang.” Jiang Yuyan said while looking into his eyes and still holding his hand on her left bosom.

Lu Qiang didn’t know how to react to this but he was happy to see, she was out of her fear and her body was willing to accept him. She continued, “This is all because I truly love you. I was a fool to say that I don’t love you but now I have realized how much I do.”

Lu Qiang was just staring at her to imprint each and every word from her, in his mind. After the fight between them last night, he didn’t expect her to confess to him again and this soon. She continued, “I love you, Lu Qiang and I can’t think about to live without you, ever. If you leave me one day, I might die with the pain of being away from you.” With this, tears rolled down from her eyes.

Lu Qiang Hugged her tightly as he felt glad and emotional at the same time to hear her words. He didn’t say anything and kissed her as he was assuring her through the kiss, what she wanted to hear.

206 Brace Yourself...

After sharing a long kiss again, Lu Qiang bent down to lift Jiang Yuyan in his arms and took her to the bed. He put her down slowly and climbed into bed, to be on top of her. Once both settled down, Lu Qiang kissed her and slid his one hand under her back towards the hooks of her inner wear. Before he unhooked it he looked at her. There was no word but he understood what he should, just by looking into her eyes. He unhooked it and pulled it down to expose her bosoms.

He leaned down on her again and touched her left bosom with his right hand while taking the support of his left-hand's elbow, not to put the weight of his body on hers. It was the first time when he touched it and even felt it's softness.

The moment he touched it, Jiang Yuyan held his shoulder tightly but it was not because of her fear. It was because she was feeling this for the first time when someone touched her in her forbidden zone. She felt the warmth of his palms on her bosom which felt good. He moved his other hand to the right one and felt it too but while doing it he noticed the scars on her chest.

A few small scars on her chest were visible and he traced them with his fingers. He remembered the scars he saw on her chest when they were in the bathroom, a few days back. He looked for those two long scars and traced it too. He remembered, how she got them and felt bad. Upon seeing him sad, Jiang Yuyan spoke, "Don't see or touch them, those are ugly I told you before?"

"And I told you, nothing that belongs to you is ugly for me." Lu Qiang said and kissed the scar which was just below her left bosom, moving to her back along with her ribs. With his kisses on the scar, Jiang Yuyan felt his hot breath and his face touching to her bosom. Once he kissed the scar he looked at her and said, "Just feel these moments and don't think about the past."

She nodded and said, “I won’t.”

Lu Qiang kneaded her left bosom gently with his hand and kissed it. He looked at her pink bead like an attractive nipple and couldn’t hold back from tasting it. His mouth covered the pink and attractive peak of her bosom in a moment. He sucked it, rolling his tongue around it while his hand was holding her bosom at the bottom to help him taste it whole. His other hand was working his way to her right bosom to knead it gently. While sucking, he often used his teeth to pull her delicate nipple which made her feel hollow in her core.

When Jiang Yuyan felt the warmth of his mouth on the sensitive peak of her bosom and his tongue doing its magic, she couldn’t help but let out a soft moan with her back arched while lifting her chest up a little and toes curled to bury them into a soft mattress. As Lu Qiang increased the intensity of the way he was sucking her bosom without living an inch, her soft moaning converted into loud ones, with the ticklish feeling in her core. Her hands which were on his shoulder moved to the back of his head to run her fingers in his hair and to press his face against her breast.

The loud moaning of Jiang Yuyan was making him do it even more intensely. He shifted from her left side to her right bosom and he did the same with it. He kissed, sucked and nibbled her soft bosoms while leaving the red-blue marks on it. Lu Qiang didn’t want to stop because he waited for it so long. As he had it finally, it was not enough for him and he wanted it more.

His way of fondling her bosoms was getting harsh and he was kneading them hard which made her feel pain but she enjoyed it and didn’t want him to stop. This foreign feeling in her lower abdomen made her feel want for more and she was able to feel, she was wet down there.

After playing with her breast to his heart content, he lifted his head up to look at her. Both were panting heavily and both looked like wanting for more. With her heavy breathing, her chest was moving up and down which looked alluring to him. Jiang Yuyan held his face in her hands and kissed him.

Lu Qiang parted away and asked, "Did you like it?" He was looking into her eyes to see how content she was feeling.

Jiang Yuyan bushed to hear him. She nodded a little and said, "Hmm!" with a pleasant smile on her face.

Lu Qiang felt glad to see her smiling with the pleasure she had just now and said, "But, today I am not going to stop with just this much. So brace yourself."

Lu Qiang's words made her already faster-beating heart to jump out of her chest as to think of what was going to happen next. When she kissed him on her own and allowed him to touch her chest, she was ready for everything but still somewhere she felt scared. Lu Qiang noticed the sudden change in her expression and said while caressing her left cheek with his thumb, "Don't be scared, I will try to be gentle as much as possible." He had a teasing smile on his face.

These words from Lu Qiang made her even more afraid which made her have goosebumps all over her body. She looked at him while blinking her bright and starry eyes. Lu Qiang kissed her both eyes and said, "I want to taste you whole today." He noticed the goose bumps she had and smiled.

Jiang Yuyan gulped and nodded as saying 'Yes' though she was scared. Lu Qiang trailed kisses from her neck to her breast while running his fingers along with it, with a gentle touch on her delicate skin, wherever he kissed her.

207 I Trust You..

Each kiss from Lu Qiang was leaving goosebumps on Jiang Yuyan's already tensed and afraid body. He moved further towards her stomach and trailed light kisses around her belly button while holding her waist with both hands on either side. He was kissing, sucking and nuzzling in a soft skin of her abdomen with a light biting in between that made her contract the muscles of her abdomen, inside.

Lu Qiang moved from her stomach to her private part which was covered in attractive red lace panty. He tucked his fingers in her panty on either side of her waist to remove it. When Jiang Yuyan realized what he was up to, she held his hands as she felt embarrassed as well as scared. Lu Qiang looked at her just to see her looking at him with puzzled expressions.

Lu Qiang retreated his fingers and went back up. He looked into her eyes and said with a calm and assuring voice while caressing her cheeks, "Don't be afraid. I will do only as much as you can take it. You would be fine trust me."

Jiang Yuyan nodded hesitantly and said, "I trust you."

Lu Qiang gave her a peck on her lips and went back down towards her south. He kissed her on her sex with her panty on which made her call his name, "Lu Qiang!" He looked at her and said, "I am going to make you cry out my name even more so brace yourself as I told you before." These words made her heart beat faster. Lu Qiang didn't want to be soft this time as again, it would only end up in not doing anything and he wanted to do it for her, this time.

He traced her sex with her fingers, which made her gasp deeply and clutch the bedsheet in her hands again in reflex to this foreign touch. Upon seeing her reaction, Lu Qiang did it again but this time with a bit of pressure, almost making her lower lips to open, which made her close her legs tightly. As she did it, Lu Qiang used it as an opportunity to remove her

red lace panties. He pulled it down and removed it in one swift move.

Jiang Yuyan tightened her legs, even more, to hide her intimate part as she felt embarrassed. Her legs were folded in knees and tightly closed. Lu Qiang caressed her knees and kissed them while moving both hands up and down slowly along her thighs to caress them gently.

“You can’t hide, what belongs to me. So, be a good girl, Yuyan!” Lu Qiang said while looking into her scared and embarrassed eyes with his passionate ones. Her name in his hoarse voice sounded seductive to her ears. She loosened her tightly closed legs as his words were like a command to her. When Lu Qiang realized, she was ready to give up, he parted her legs away and sat in between them. He looked at her sex which made her cover her face with both her palms as she was embarrassed with this.

Lu Qiang smiled to see her reaction and said, “Covering your face is not going to stop me from looking here so remove your hands and let me see you.”

Jiang Yuyan shook her head as saying ‘No’ to it. “Okay! If you won’t remove your hands, I will do something that will make you cry for no more but still, I won’t stop. Do you want it?”

Jiang Yuyan shook her head again and removed her hands from her face. She looked at him as thinking about what he was going to do now. Lu Qiang spread her legs and ran his fingers along her sex to open her lips in between her thighs. Involuntarily, she tried to close her legs again to resist the sensation she felt with the mere touch of his fingers. Lu Qiang held her legs tightly with both hands and parted them again and said, “I am feeling like to tie your legs to the bed so that you won’t be able to do it again.”

His words scared her even more. Jiang Yuyan was breathing heavily and her heart was running faster as she was feeling anxious. She didn’t say anything and let him spread her legs. She knew they both had to go through it one day so it was not a big deal but the embarrassment of being seen was stronger than the fact, known to her.

Lu Qiang lowered down his head to take a look at that forbidden place which looked alluring and he wanted to evade it at the very moment. He parted away her pink lips and touched her knob with his finger. Jiang Yuyan gasped heavily while clutching the bed sheet in her hands and curled her toes while folding her legs in knees, a little. Lu Qiang caressed her thighs to calm her down and said, "Relax." Jiang Yuyan nodded in spite of her anxious brain was not able to process his words properly.

Lu Qiang lowered his head further down and ran his tongue through her pink lips while parting them away with his fingers. He felt the soft texture of her sex on his tongue and lips which he wanted to explore again and again. He continued to lick and nibble her lips while swirling his tongue around her knob. Jiang Yuyan felt the warmth of his tongue inside her sex and couldn't help but arch her back in the heat of arousal. She was sensitive and it didn't take much time for her to get wet. Lu Qiang tasted her amazing salty, sour, organic fluid that he could go licking for an hour.

While tasting her and playing with her sex, Lu Qiang moved his sight up to look at her without stopping his tongue work for even a second. For him, her absolute surrender to his playing around, her moans and groans and looks were something to die for. Seeing, feeling, hearing, smelling and tasting his woman was something intoxicating and indescribable.

Jiang Yuyan felt the pressure building up in her lower abdomen with Lu Qiang's work in her sex. She involuntarily moved her hands to his head, twining through his hair. While licking her sensitive spot, Lu Qiang inserted his finger inside her, which made her body shake and she buried her nails in the skin of his scalp. It was a bit painful for Lu Qiang but it didn't stop him from tasting his woman.

He let her settle down after inserting his finger into her and slowly started to move it in and out while still swirling his tongue around her swollen knob and licking her lips in between. He felt her soft inner walls tightening around his finger. She was wet inside like she was ready to welcome him.

Lu Qiang increased the pace of fingering which made her grind herself against his face.

Jiang Yuyan's head was getting fuzzy with this and she couldn't think of what to feel. Her eyes were closed and her lips were parted away to gasp and to give out soft moaning. Both hands twinning through his hair, with her back arched and toes curled to resist the tension building in her core, she couldn't understand what was happening to her but she wanted it to go on and on

208 Offering Herself To The Lion...

Lu Qiang could feel Jiang Yuyan was almost at her peak. He continued the movement of his finger inside her at a steady pace while playing with her swollen knob with his tongue. He replaced his tongue with the thumb of his other hand and looked at her. She was gasping and breathing heavily while moaning loudly. "Let go of it Yuyan. Let go of yourself." He said calmly but in a bit ordering way.

Jiang Yuyan heard him through her mind was fuzzy. His ordering her worked as a way to release herself. She cried out loudly Lu Qiang's name and her body collapsed in a bed. She felt like she was falling down from a cliff and her body was floating in the air. Panting heavily, tears rolling down from the corner of her eyes while her body was covered in beads of sweat. She never felt like this before as it was her first time going through it.

When she found her release, Lu Qiang stopped working his fingers and pulled it out which made Jiang Yuyan feel empty inside. She opened her watery eyes to look at him while still being immersed in a sea of her release. Lu Qiang looked at her and licked his finger which he used inside her. It was covered in her salty, sour and organic fluid which tasted heavenly for him.

Jiang Yuyan was a little shocked to see him, tasting her fluid with a content expression on his face as he liked it but she was too exhausted to say anything. She closed her eyes and lied down in a bed lifelessly.

Lu Qiang caressed her thighs with his hands to make her tensed body feel relax. He didn't disturb her by saying or asking anything and allowed her to be calm on her own to feel every bit of her release. Once she was calmed Lu Qiang lied down beside her on his one side to look at her.

Kissing her forehead, he wiped tears from the corner of her eyes and caressed her cheeks. "Are you fine now?" Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes to look at him. She felt shy again about what happened moments before. She nodded as saying 'she was fine' and turned to her one side to hug Lu Qiang while burying her face in his chest. She was smiling with a blush on her cheeks.

Lu Qiang knew what she was feeling at the moment and he smiled too. He hugged her and said, "I am going to make you feel this every night from now on, so get used to it."

Jiang Yuyan didn't answer him back as she was shy and embarrassed. She just hugged him tightly to hide her blushing face by burying it in his chest. She suddenly realized Lu Qiang's clothes were wet and also realized it was because of her as she was drenched in the rain when she came to him. Lu Qiang removed her clothes but his clothes were still on. She looked at him and said, "Your clothes are still wet. Why didn't you remove it?"

"It's fine. I will remove them after some time." He replied. When Lu Qiang removed Jiang Yuyan's clothes, he didn't think about to remove his own wet clothes as he wanted this night to belong to her only. He wanted to focus on her and to do something for her without expecting anything in return.

Jiang Yuyan was aware that she had to do something for him and asked, "Don't you want to do it? I mean, I..."

"It's okay! Today is your day, so relax and don't think about it," he said before she could say anything further. Once she was calm, and her body retrieved itself he said, "Let's have a shower. You were drenched in rain and your hair is wet too. As Jiang Yuyan nodded, Lu Qiang took her to the bathroom.

Making her stand under the shower, he helped her clean herself like she was a little girl. She was standing in front of him naked but without feeling embarrassed, being overwhelmed to see how much her man cared for her. She was busy admiring him with her sight following all his movements. When Lu Qiang turned on the shower, Jiang Yuyan pulled him under it with her and said while smiling teasingly, "You are

drenched in the shower so you should remove your clothes now.”

Lu Qiang held her hands which were holding his shirt’s collar and said while staring into her eyes with his intense ones, “Think before what you say. If my clothes come off, it would be dangerous for you.”

“I want to see how dangerous?” Jiang Yuyan replied boldly as she didn’t want him to stop and wanted him to ask her for her help. She thought to do something for him too and she found being bold was the only way to do so.

Standing under the shower, Lu Qiang started to unbutton his shirt while staring in her eyes, carrying a mischievous smile on his face. Trying to maintain herself calm she gulped and realized, she offered herself to a lion. Lu Qiang removed his shirt and threw it on the floor as showing his well-toned body which looked alluring with water from shower flowing down across it, touching every inch of his body.

Jiang Yuyan forgot about her fear and touched his strong chest. She moved her hands everywhere across his upper body to feel it. She felt, how strong built he had. Wide shoulders, strong chest and well-toned abs. She touched them to her heart content and Lu Qiang too didn’t stop her. He was enjoying to see her reaction the way she was exploring his body as she had never seen it before.

Once she finished exploring him, Lu Qiang held her hands again in his, kissed in her palms and said while looking at her, “So you want to help me?” Jiang Yuyan nodded hesitantly and said, “Yes!”

209 Worried For Friend..

In the party hall, Jiang Yang and Lu Feng finally found a free time after being with Wang Peng for some time. Lu Feng's eyes were searching for something which Jiang Yang noticed and said, "My sister must have found her way to your brother so stop searching for her."

"I am just worried as we have one wolf here," replied Lu Feng while still searching for Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yang smiled to look at Lu Feng's worried face and said, "When one lion is with her then you don't have to be worried."

Lu Feng nodded to hear it and said, "Hmm! Right. But I can't stop myself from worrying about her."

"I know. After all, you are one of her admirers too whose heart beats for her even if you try to deny it." Jiang Yang replied teasingly while smiling widely which made Lu Feng to curse him, "A** hole! Can't you shut your blatant mouth?"

"Why should I? Am I wrong? The way you looked at her with your jaw dropped, almost touching the ground when she came out of her room in her beautiful red dress, it proves a lot," said Jiang Yang to tease Lu Feng even more.

Lu Feng gave out a deep sigh and said, "She was looking pretty so that was an obvious reaction and what kind of a friend are you? You should avoid saying this to me directly as it might hurt me."

"I am the kind of friend who doesn't want his friend to keep his emotions buried in his heart and get hurt alone. instead, I want him to take it out and show how he is feeling. It's okay to like someone who can't be with you. isn't it normal? said Jiang Yuyan while feeling sad about his friend but he knew, he can't do anything in this matter.

Lu Feng was aware that Jiang Yang cared about him so he accepted his caring words and said, "I am fine. Don't think too

much.”

“Haha! I won’t. I can just wish, if I was a girl, I would have compensated for my sister’s absence in your life. By the way, as a man, I am not bad. What say?” Jinag Yang asked and winked at him.

Lu Feng frowned to hear it and said, “F**k you! Even if you were a girl, there was no chance for the annoyance like you, in my life.”

“Ohh right, because the heart of these Lu brothers only beats for my sister.” Jiang Yang said it and looked at Lu Lijun who was busy with his cousin, “Thank god Lu Lijun is a kid, or he would be the third admirer of her and I would have been consoling two of you here, right at this moment.”

“Yeah! You should be thankful though. If he was an adult, he would have had Yuyan no matter what.” Lu Feng replied while looking at Lu Lijun.

“Really?” Jiang Yang asked as being surprised by the words from Lu Feng and looked carefully at Lu Lijun.

“Hmm! You don’t know him yet,” replied Lu Feng with a serious expression on his face.

In the corridor on the other side of the lawn....

“Who was she?” The handsome man in a black tuxedo asked Zhi Ruo.

Zhi Ruo was still looking in the direction in which Jiang Yuyan ran away. She was worried to see Jiang Yuyan in a disturbed condition as it was somewhat because of her. Upon hearing the words from the man, Zhi Ruo frowned and replied, “The way she was calling Lu Qiang’s name, you should understand it. Is your brain stopped working or what?”

“My brain is working fine or you would be in a bed with me right at the moment as your punishment instead of standing here in a corridor, after what you did.” The man replied in his firm voice. He had no expression on his face but had something behind his deep sea blue eyes which made Zhi Ruo have goosebumps all over her body and she stepped back to stand a bit away from him.

The man observed her reaction and said with one corner of his lips curved up. “Are you still scared of me?”

“I...I am not. Why should I be?” Zhi Ruo replied while trying to hide how nervous she was.

“Hmm! You are right. Why you should be scared of me. I haven’t done anything with you, yet,” the man replied and took one step towards her.

Zhi Ruo stepped further back and asked while looking into his eyes, “How did you find me?”

“I think you forgot who I am. Do you want me to remind me again?” He asked and stepped towards her again.

“I don’t want to come with you. So please go back,” she said while moving further back.

“I know you hate me but I promised him that I will protect you always and I will do that even if I have to keep you in a cage,” he replied and was ready to hold her hand.

Zhi Ruo pulled back her hand and said, “He is dead and his promises went away with him. So leave me alone,” With this, Zhi Ruo started to cry.

The man who had calm expressions on his face looked angry with what Zhi Ruo said. “Yes! He is dead and it’s all because of you Zhi Ruo. I lost him because of you, so you have to take responsibility for it.”

“Why don’t you just kill me then?” Zhi Ruo said and sat on the floor on her knees crying and sobbing.

“Trust me I want to, every time I see you but death is an easy punishment for you. I am going to make you suffer for your whole life, Zhi Ruo.” The man said and stood away from her. Seeing her crying helplessly was breaking his heart but he didn’t want to acknowledge it. He wanted to hide what he actually felt for her. He wanted to make her stand up and hug her to say ‘Don’t cry. It was not your fault’ but he couldn’t. He kept staring in another direction where it was raining while listening to the crying and sobbing Zhi Ruo which was like piercing his own heart with needles.

210 Trying To Claim Her...

In Lu Qiang's room..

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were standing under a shower. Upon hearing "Yes" from Jiang Yuyan Lu Qiang pulled her closer which made her naked body to touch his. He felt her soft bosoms against his strong chest. Water from the shower was flowing down across their bodies which was making everything even more tempting for both of them.

Lu Qiang held her both hands tightly on her backside just above her waist with both his hands to secure them in place. It made their bodies to touch every inch of it to each other. Jiang Yuyan felt difficult to breath as Lu Qiang pressed her hard against his chest by applying pressure from the back.

As, feeling pressure on her chest, she parted her lips to gasp. Her parted and moist lips looked tempting that made Lu Qiang devour them ferociously. Sucking and nibbling her delicate lips, Lu Qiang moved his one hand to the back side of her head while his other hand was still holding her hands behind her back.

Jiang Yuyan was unable to move even an inch as her delicate, thin and tiny body was captured into his stronghold. His hand was caressing the back of her head by running his fingers through her wet hair and pressing her lips hard against his.

He bit her upper lip which made her whine in pain. Testing the iron on his tongue, he stopped and said, "I told you it would be dangerous for you."

Jiang Yuyan licked her hurt lip with her tongue and said in her low and seductive voice, "I don't mind."

Her fearless words made Lu Qiang to exhaled through his mouth and he said, "Like this, you will make it hard for me to control myself."

"Who is asking you to control?" she replied boldly and without any fear, not being affected by what he said.

These words from her made him lose control over the last bit, he was holding back. Taking her against the wall behind, he kissed her. He removed the belt around his waist and threw it on a floor which made a sound as its metal buckle banged on a floor. While kissing, he placed both hands on the edge of his pants as asking her to unbutton it.

Jiang Yuyan followed his lead to unbuttoned his pants and unzipped it too. She could feel the bulge inside his pants when she unzipped it which gave her goosebumps. Clutching her lip in his teeth to suck it hard to the extent of making it bleed, he removed his pants and his innerwear which he pushed to one side with his feet.

Getting rid of all barriers between both of them, he pinned her against the wall and pressed himself against her and asked, “Do you really want it?” his manhood was between her thighs, pressing hard against her sex.

To feel his manhood pressing and stroking lightly against her private part, she gasped with her eyes wide open and nodded as saying ‘Yes’. she was scared but the feeling of wanting him was stronger than her fear. She wanted him to claim her and never let her go away from him. She wanted him to be hers only.

Lu Qiang moved from her lips to her neck, kissing, sucking, nibbling and leaving red blue marks on her fair and delicate skin while his one hand moved towards her sex. He ran his fingers along with her sex and circled his thumb around her already swollen knob. Slowly, he inserted his finger inside her, which made her bury her nails into his shoulders.

While kissing hard along her neck to her breast, he started to move his finger in and out of her sacred place slowly to make her moan in pleasure. He was playing with her bosoms and tasting them to his heart content while sucking and nibbling the pink peaks of her bosoms.

Once he realized, she was wet enough and she was about to get her release, he pulled his finger out from her inside. She looked at him with puzzled expressions as to know why he stopped when she was ready to release herself.

Lu Qiang knew what she was thinking. He looked into her puzzled and wanting for more eyes with his intense one. He put his finger, drenched in her fluid, in his mouth to lick it whole and said, “You taste really good and I am feeling like to suck you dry.”

Jiang Yuyan was looking at him with her moist and heavy to open eyes while gasping for air. The way he licked his finger covered in her fluid and the words he said were arousing for her.

Lu Qiang held her by her waist with his one hand to make her stand steady and securely between him and the wall behind her while he lifted her one leg to circle around his own waist. Circling her arms around his neck she was ready to face what was going to come next with her heart beating faster and ready to jump out of her chest.

Lu Qiang was ready to enter inside her but before he could do it, he asked, “Will you be alright?”

She nodded to look into his eyes, though she was scared inside. “If you can’t take it, just stop me.” He said feeling worried about her though he didn’t want to stop at all.

“Hmm!” she replied. Lu Qiang positioned himself in front of her entrance and pushed his manhood inside her a little, but before he could do it properly she cried out in pain. Lu Qiang stopped to hear her as he felt worried. He let go of her leg which was circled around his waist and hugged her as feeling guilty about his action.

Jiang Yuyan was shivering in pain with her eyes closed and burying her face in the crook of his neck while being unable to stand properly. “I am sorry, Yuyan!” Seeing her in pain, he couldn’t help but apologize to her.

211 Cute Iceberg...

Letting her get calm in his embrace, Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan's face. She had a painful expression on her face with tears rolling down from her eyes. Lu Qiang covered both of them in towels and took her to the bed by carrying in his arms. He put her on the bed slowly and sat beside her. Looking at her with guilty expressions, he wiped the tears from the corners of her eyes and caressed her cheek with his thumb.

All the way from the bathroom to the bed, Jiang Yuyan had her eyes closed and her thighs closed tightly together because of the pain. When Lu Qiang wiped her tears, she opened her eyes to look at him. She heard him saying 'I am sorry' in a bathroom, but at that moment she was in pain to say anything to him. She felt bad to see his face full of the guilt of hurting her.

Jiang Yuyan held his hand which was caressing her cheek and said, "You don't have to feel bad or apologize to me. Instead, I should apologize for not being able to bear it and spoiled everything. Isn't it normal to feel pain but I failed it. I am...."

"Shhhhh! No more words. I should have been patient to make you comfortable at first, but I was being impatient and hurt you." He said it before she could apologize to him for the reason which was not right in Lu Qiang's opinion. He realized, it was more of his fault as he should have done it when she was in a comfortable position and that too in a bed, but he lost his senses and tried to do it, the way it took him to.

Feeling worried about her being hurt and in pain, he said, "Let me check if you are hurt then I will ask the doctor to give some ointment for you."

Jiang Yuyan smiled to hear it and said, "There is no need. It's fine."

"But...."

“Trust me I am fine, Lu Qiang,” she said to assure him once again.

“Okay!” Taking her words as an assurance, he got up from the bed and went to the wardrobe to bring clothes for both of them. As it was not their home, Lu Qiang didn’t have any clothes of Jiang Yuyan. He pulled out one of his white shirt for her to wear while he took out pair of pajamas for him.

After wearing his clothes, Lu Qiang helped Jiang Yuyan to wear his shirt and dried her wet hair. Upon seeing her in his shirt, he couldn’t help but stare at her to see how alluring she was looking in it. He averted his sight and said, “Like this, it’s going to be hard for me. He ran his fingers through his hair and exhaled out deeply through his mouth.

Jiang Yuyan blushed as she understood what he meant. She pulled up a quilt over her bare legs up to her chest and lied down in a bed, covering herself to hide it from Lu Qiang’s sight. She knew, Lu Qiang won’t touch her because of fear of hurting her again and he would have no other option than controlling himself.

Lu Qiang too lied down beside her and turned to his one side to face her. Jiang Yuyan turned her head to look back at him and said, “Others must be searching for us in the party hall. When they will ask what should we answer them?”

“The others you are talking about, are my family and they might have understood till now that we are together somewhere,” he replied casually as he was not worried about others.

“Won’t it be a bit embarrassing?” she asked.

“For me, it’s not. I am with the woman I love and it’s the best thing in my life, not the thing to feel embarrassed about.”

“Hmm! I too won’t feel embarrassed from now on because I too am with the man I love.”

Her reply made him smile ear to ear while showing his cute canines. Those were the sweetest and adorable words he could hear from her. Upon seeing him smiling like this, she said, “You know, it is the rarest thing to see you smile like this and I

love to see it. I want to say ‘how cute!’ but it’s awkward to say it to the iceberg like you.”

“Iceberg? Huh?” he said with his one eyebrow raised in a question.

“Yes! Iceberg,” she replied while straight staring into his eyes.

“Do you want to see this iceberg melting? he asked teasingly.

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said while securing the quilt over her chest tightly, “Nope! Not right now!”

Lu Qiang smiled and went closer to her to take her in his embrace and said, “I love you, Yuyan.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled to hear it and replied, “I love you too, Lu Qiang.”

In the party hall...

Party was about to get over. Upon not seeing Jiang Yuyan around, Elder Lu asked, “Where is Jiang Yuyan?” Jiang Yang and Lu Feng looked at each other to think about what to answer. They were not worried about elder Lu asking the question but they were worried about Su Hui.

Before they could answer, Su Hui said, “Zhi Ruo and Lu Qiang is not here too. I think they must be together somewhere.” Hearing it, expressions on everyone’s faces changed as they knew it was not possible. Also, Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both were not there, so it was obvious for them to understand what was the fact but nobody said anything.

Just at the right moment, something happened in the party hall and everyone looked in the direction of the door. The handsome man and a Zhi Ruo entered inside the hall.

Everyone started to talk to each other as they recognized the person but nobody dared to go to him. The handsome man walked further inside the hall, just then Wang Zhilan and Wang Chao went to greet him.

“We are glad to see you here and you finally found the time to come here.” Said Wang Chao with a wide smile on his face.

“It was my pleasure to come here as I found what I was searching for.” He replied with a cold voice and no expression

on his face. Zhi Ruo was standing beside him, one step back with her head lowered down.

Su Hui was shocked to see, Zhi Ruo with the man as he was not any common person to be with. Others were shocked too and looked at Zhi Ruo and a man with surprise. After greeting Wangs the man looked at Lu Jinhai and said, “Nice to meet you here again Chairman Lu Jinhai.” Lu Jinhai too answered his greeting with a smile and a handshake.

Su Hui was still not out of her shock and stepped towards Zhi Ruo. Before she could ask Zhi Ruo anything, the man said in his cold voice, “Zhi Ruo, You don’t have to answer anything to anyone here.” Zhi Ruo nodded lightly with her head down.

Upon hearing these words, Su Hui swallowed her words and she didn’t dare to ask anything to Zhi Ruo. After meeting a couple of the day, the man left the hall with Zhi Ruo following him while other guests were still looking at the man.

212 Comforting A Sister..

Su Hui was still in shock but didn't dare to say or ask anything. The party was over and when Elder Lu found some time alone, he went to Lu Feng and Jiang Yang who were busy talking to each other and asked, "Is Jiang Yuyan with Lu Qiang?"

Lu Feng looked in another direction as not wanting to answer elder Lu while Jiang Yang nodded saying 'Yes' as he knew elder Lu was the person who was already aware of lots of things and there was no point in hiding it from him.

"Glad to know it or I thought, this time both were going to prolong their fight," elder Lu said after giving out a deep sigh and went towards his son, Lu Jinhai to talk. "So, what we heard about him was the truth?," elder Lu asked.

"Yes, father! But don't worry. Zhi Ruo would be safe and happy with him," replied Lu Jinhai to assure his father.

"I hope so too as I am worried about her father, Zhi Guang too. How is he now?"

"Hmm! He is still in Hospital, father. Soon I will visit him." Lu Jinhai replied and both went to their rooms.

Next morning...

Lu Qiang woke up and saw a message on his cell phone. He looked at Jiang Yuyan who was sleeping peacefully. He immediately went to the bathroom to get ready as he had to go somewhere as mentioned in the message, he received. Once he came out of the bathroom and got ready, he kissed on Jiang Yuyan's forehead who was awake by then and said, "I have to go somewhere so you sleep and I will be back soon."

Jiang Yang nodded and said bye to him. Coming out of the room, he went to the garden of the hotel. The man was waiting for him with Zhi Ruo sitting in a four-seater coffee table. The man stood up to greet Lu Qiang with a handshake.

“Nice to meet you after so many years, Lu Qiang.” The man said while still carrying his usual cold expressions but there was a little difference in the way he was talking to Lu Qiang from the way he talked to others. His eyes showed Lu Qiang was someone who was dear to him.

“Nice to see you too. I didn’t expect us to meet in a situation like this” Lu Qiang replied while having respect for the man in front of him.

“Thank you for understanding the situation and not meddling in between.” The man said while moving his sight across Zhi Ruo, who was sitting quietly in the chair with her head down.

“I did it for the sake of Zhi Ruo, so no need to thank me.” Lu Qiang said while looking at silent Zhi Ruo. The girl who couldn’t be quiet for a single moment was sitting like a lifeless body. When she heard Lu Qiang, she looked at him being upset for not supporting her.

Lu Qiang averted his sight from her and said to look at the man again, “Right now she is not aware of lots of things happened around her so it was obvious for her to take this step.”

The Man nodded and said to divert the topic, “From what I saw last night, I think your wait for someone is over.”

“Hmm! I know, nothing can miss your eyes. You are right about it though and I hope I would be able to say the same thing to you too.” Lu Qiang said while passing his sight across Zhi Ruo who were unaware of what these two were talking about.

The man understood what Lu Qiang meant and said, “You are thinking too much, Lu Qiang.”

“Well, I hope, I am not.” Lu Qiang said to which the man smiled a little. Lu Qiang continued, “I know you are the only one who can protect and take care of her that’s why I took a decision to allow you to take her with you and I hope you won’t disappoint me and him.”

The man had darkness in his eyes upon hearing ‘Him’ word from Lu Qiang and said while clenching his fist, “He is the

reason, she is still alive or I would have....”

“Don’t say something that you didn’t mean. I think, there is no need to make a smart person like you realize, what is right and what is wrong.” Lu Qiang stopped him before he could say something that might make him regret in the future.

“I think we should leave now.” The man said not wanting to react to what Lu Qiang said. Lu Qiang nodded as saying ‘Okay’ and stepped towards Zhi Ruo.

Zhi Ruo understood It was a time for her to leave so she stood up. Lu Qiang stood in front of her and said, “I know, you are upset with me but trust me this is the best thing I could have done for you. I did what I have done for my sister.”

Zhi Ruo looked at him with the tears in her eyes. She felt choked and couldn’t say anything. Lu Qiang patted her head and said, “Things are not always what you see on the surface so trust me and go with him. He is the one for you.”

Tears rolled down from Zhi Ruo’s eyes. She was about to wipe them with her palm but suddenly there was handkerchief in front of her. She looked at it and it was the man who was offering it to her. Lu Qiang had it too but he didn’t offer it to her as he was sure to see this picture.

Zhi Ruo didn’t accept it and instead wiped her tears again with her palm. The man frowned and held her hand to put his handkerchief in her hand and stepped away to stand a distance away from her while facing in other direction.

She was standing there while staring at the handkerchief in her hands. “I told you, things are not what you are seeing. The actual picture is totally different, Zhi Ruo. You don’t know him well yet.” Lu Qiang said to make her feel better and to show her reality,

Zhi Ruo listened to Lu Qiang and said, “I have committed a sin, Lu Qiang. Seeing me every day must be the torture from him. I don’t want him to protect me or look after me. Why doesn’t he just kill me or let me go away from him?”

“Because, somewhere in his heart, he is aware that it was not your fault and you are hurt too as much he is.”

Zhi Ruo looked at the man who was standing a bit far while facing his back towards them and said, “I think, I should leave now and I am sorry to trouble you, Lu Qiang.”

“You are not a trouble Zhi Ruo. You are like a sister to me. If you need me ever, I am always here to help you.”

Zhi Ruo smiled to hear him and stepped towards The man. As Zhi Ruo reached to him, the man started walking in the direction of the car waiting for them at the entrance of the hotel. Both the man and Zhi Ruo sat in the car. Zhi Ruo looked at Lu Qiang and waved her hand to him to say goodbye. Lu Qiang just smiled while standing there with his hands tucked in his pockets and left to go inside once Zhi Ruo disappeared from his sight.

213 Proof Of The Love...

Ming Mansion...

Ming Rusheng was in a gym. Attached to his room, there was a personal mini gym which had a door to enter from inside of his room. He was hitting the punching bag with boxing gloves on. He had angry expressions on his face and was punching the bag like crazy. The incidence of Lu Qiang kissing Jiang Yuyan was running through his mind again and again which was making him lose control over himself.

When Lu Qiang kissed Jiang Yuyan, he was shocked and wanted to stop Lu Qiang but the moment he saw, Jiang Yuyan responding back to the kiss without any hesitation, he couldn't think of anything and left the place.

Ming Rusheng left the party hall, he straight came back to the capital with the next flight. He couldn't sleep for the whole night. He never felt this way before. Seeing Jiang Yuyan with Lu Qiang at university was not affecting him and he was quite fine with it. The moment he saw them kissing, something triggered his brain and heart and he realized, its not just simple feelings he had for Jiang Yuyan and there was more to it.

Taking his anger out on punching bag he was trying to deny what he saw and what he felt for Jiang Yuyan but it was not working which was making him more frustrated and angry. After taking out his anger on punching bag he sat in a chair with his eyes closed. He went for a shower and headed downstairs for breakfast after getting ready.

When he went downstairs, Ming Lan was going through her social networking site account on the tablet. She saw the pictures from the ring ceremony of Wang Peng. She was searching for Lu Qiang's pic. Once she saw it she felt happy and looked out for more pics, just then she found a pic with Jiang Yuyan in it and she exclaimed, "Mom, come here. See this." and she held the tablet in front of Zhang Jie. "Isn't Jiang

Yuyan looking too pretty.” Zhang Jei looked at the pic and nodded with a smile on her face.

The moment Ming Rusheng heard Jiang Yuyan’s name, he stepped towards his sister and sat beside her on a sofa. Ming Lan noticed it and passed the tablet to her brother and said in a very low voice that only he could hear, “I am sure, you were not able to move away, your sight from her. Ming Rusheng passed his sight across the tablet screen and said while looking in another direction, “I didn’t notice her.”

“Ohh really?” she said while looking at him with teasing smile.

“I think, I should make you walk to the university in your heels then only you will stop saying nonsense things.

“Cough-Cough!” Ming Lan stayed silent and didn’t say anything further. After breakfast, Ming Rusheng dropped Ming Lan to the university where he wished to see Jiang Yuyan but she was not there. Not being able to see her, made him even more frustrated.

When Lu Qiang went back to his room, he saw Jiang Yuyan was not there. He realized she must have gone back to her room. It was breakfast time so Lu Qiang was waiting for Jiang Yuyan but she didn’t come out of her room. Lu Qiang finally stepped out of his room to go to her, just then Jiang Yang too came out of his room to call Lu Feng.

Jiang Yang smiled to look at Lu Qiang and said, “Troubling my sister for a night was not enough, that you are going to her again.”

Lu Qiang sighed and said, “I am going to call her out for breakfast.”

“Don’t bother. She must be busy hiding the proofs of what both of you did last night.” Jiang Yang said shamelessly.

Lu Qiang felt speechless in front of him but said, “I am going to help her hide it properly.” Lu Qiang said it and knocked on the door of her room.

Jiang Yuyan opened the door with a scarf wrapped around her neck while picking her face out to see who was it. When she

saw Lu Qiang, she opened the door to let him come inside but saw her brother was standing there too. She felt embarrassed to see him as she knew, nothing could be hidden from her brother's sight. Jiang Yang didn't say anything to her, instead, he turned back to go to Lu Feng's room. Jiang Yuyan knew, her brother intentionally avoided her. She gave out a deep sigh and closed the door.

"Is there any problem?" Lu Qiang asked as he entered further in her room. Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, "Yes! See this." She removed the scarf around her neck. Lu Qiang looked at her neck and stepped towards her. He touched those red marks on her neck and pulled her neckline little down to see if there are more. What he saw, it shocked him. She was covered in those marks all over. He couldn't understand what to say. He remembered what happened last night and how aggressive he was.

"Does it hurt?" he asked with a worried expression on his face.

"Nope! I am just worried about to hide them as I can't go showing it to everyone."

"That can be solved, I am just worried about if I hurt you."

"No, I am not hurt. These are just painless marks which I"

"Which you got after sharing those intimate moments with the man you love." before she could say further, Lu Qiang stepped towards her and said in a low voice in her ear touching his lips to her earlobe.

His words and the touch of his lips on her earlobe made her shiver and she stood quietly. Lu Qiang smiled to see what effect his few words and his touch had on her and said, "I feel like I never had enough of you. What if I have you, in breakfast today."

This made Jiang Yuyan nervous and she said, "Aren't you hungry?"

"I am. That's why I am talking about to eat you, in a breakfast." Lu Qiang smiled mischievously to see her nervous."

Avoiding his sight, she said in a low voice, "I am starving."

Both missed their dinner last night so breakfast was necessary for them. Lu Qiang dialed a number on his cellphone and said to the person on another side of the line, "I need the precious today keep it ready in half hour." The man on the other side said, "Okay"

"Let's go!" said Lu Qiang while holding her hand.

"But where? With these marks, I am not going in front of others."

Lu Qiang stopped to look at her and said "Firstly, those are not just marks, those are the moments of love we shared together. Second, those are not something you should feel embarrassed about and third, we are going back to our home."

"Our home?", she asked to make sure.

"Yes! Our home." Lu Qiang replied while taking her out of her room by holding her hand.

"Wait! My clothes, my bag, and other stuff?" she halted in her track to ask it. "Don't worry! Everything would be back, now let's go."

"Wait a second" She went back inside and brought her scarf back, to wrap around her neck to which Lu Qiang gave her a look. Upon seeing his reaction she said, "I am not embarrassed about them but I don't want other people to look at them and imagine what we did last night. It's our personal thing and it should be between only both of us." Her words were convincing enough for Lu Qiang so he didn't say anything and stepped ahead while holding her hand in his.

Staff in the hotel, knew who Lu Qiang was so they were shocked to see, Lu Qiang walking with one girl and that too holding her hand. The car was ready for them at the entrance of the hotel. Both sat inside and left.

In some time, the car reached the airport and both entered inside while Jiang Yuyan following him quietly without asking a question. A man greeted them and took them to the private jet wetting for them on a runway. Jiang Yuyan was surprised to see it and asked, "Are we going with this?" Lu Qiang nodded as saying yes and took her inside the Jet.

214 Want To Feel The Pain..

On the breakfast table, Lu Feng and Jiang Yang got messages on their cellphones from Lu Qiang, informing them about his departure from city S with Jiang Yuyan. “This punk! Always do, what he feels right. Now be ready to get the firing of questions from these people, especially that woman sitting with my father.” Lu Feng said in a low voice to Jiang Yang while pointing towards his mother.

“Hmm! Right. Nobody would have asked anything after seeing what your brother did with my sister, last night. I think it would have been better that way instead of facing questions from these people.” Jiang Yang replied.

Lu Feng gave him a cold gaze and said, “Have some shame. She is your sister.”

“She is my sister that’s why I have no shame. You know it already. And what shame are you talking about? What they did, isn’t it normal for a couple to do?” Jiang Yang replied not minding to a cold gaze from Lu Feng

Lu Feng sighed and didn’t say anything. Just then something happened what they were worried about.

“Where is Jiang Yuyan? I haven’t seen her since yesterday,” Lu Bao asked on the breakfast table. Others had guessed it till then so nobody paid attention to her whereabouts. Lu Lian pinched Lu Bao and said, “Eat your breakfast. Don’t worry about her.”

“Why? Are you not worried about her?” She is not with us since yesterday.” Lu Bao exclaimed.

Lu Lijun was sitting beside Lu Feng and said, “These annoying girls and their curious and nosy brains.”

Upon hearing it, others on the table smiled while Lu Bao couldn’t help but glare at him.

“Lu Bao, Yuyan had something important in the university today and Lu Qiang too had some urgent work to finish so

both left to go back to the capital.” Lu Feng answered in his cold voice, to which Lu Bao didn’t dare to ask another question even if she had something more to ask.

Su Hui was surprised. She didn’t expect Lu Qiang to take her with him and without even telling it to anyone. Also, both disappeared since last night, was the thing which was bothering her. As no one among the elders said anything, she preferred to shut her mouth.

After taking off, in a private jet...

Delicious breakfast was served in front of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan by an attendant in the jet. When the attendant finished serving, she left the couple alone. Jiang Yuyan felt glad to see food in front of her as she was starving to death. She was eating like a squirrel with her mouth full of food, forgetting the presence of Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang smiled too look at her and said, “Slow down or you will get indigestion.”

“I am starving and it is all your fault that I missed dinner last night.” Jiang Yuyan said with a mouth full of food, without even looking at him.

“For me, what I had for dinner last night was the tastiest thing I could ever have.” Lu Qiang said teasingly which made Jiang Yuyan choke with food and she started to cough. “I told you to slow down,” he said and started to pat her back.

Jiang Yuyan gave him a look and said, “It’s because of the shameless words you said just now.”

“How is it shameless. I am telling you a fact. For me, you are the tastiest thing to eat and it’s sad I have yet to get it completely.” he said and passed a glass of water to her.

She drank water and said, “Then who asked you to stop?”

“You were in pain,” he replied.

Jiang Yuyan looked in his eyes and asked, “Isn’t it normal for a girl to feel pain on her first intercourse. Next time, I will react in the same way, so will you stop again and never do anything?”

Her bold words surprised him. “I can’t see you in pain.”

“What if I want to go through it? Still, you won’t do it?”, she asked which made Lu Qiang smile and he said while staring back into her eyes, “You are making me feel like to take you here, right at this moment. Then don’t blame me.”

His intimidating words made her widen her eyes in a bit of a shock to imagine what his words meant. “Cough-Cough! Eat! Food is getting cold,” she said while pointing towards his dish, avoiding his sight and what he said. She filled her mouth with food as much as it could accommodate, to hide her nervousness.

Lu Qiang smiled widely to see her scared expressions and said while looking at her, “You know what? the way you are eating, reminded me of Lu Lijun. He is like this too sometimes.”

“I am always like this when I am starving. Eating food like an uncivilized person, so bear with it,” she said without taking a break from eating, mouth full of food.

“I don’t mind if you eat like this every day. You and Lu Lijun are free to do what both of you want.”

When Jiang Yuyan heard Lu Lijun’s name she thought about something and said, “I wanted to ask you something about Lu Lijun.”

Lu Qiang looked at her but he was not surprised with her question and asked, “And what’s that?”

“I think he is a bit different from the kids of his age. Sometimes he behaves like he is a kid but sometimes I get the feeling that he is not a kid anymore. His behavior confuses me. Most of the time he reminds me of you. The way he talks and makes others shut their mouth, it’s terrifying. He looks cold and scary.” Jiang Yuyan said while going through all the memories she had with Lu Lijun.

“Hmm! You noticed it. That means, he allowed you to enter into his comfort zone. Now, other than me and Lu Feng, you are the third person whom he wants to be in his world.” Lu Qiang said with a calm expression on his face.

“Why is it like this? I didn’t understand what you mean,” She asked curiously.

“First finish it. I will tell you later,” he replied and she agreed. “Hmm! Okay!”

Once they finished breakfast, Lu Qiang asked her to come with him so Jiang Yuyan followed him. Lu Qiang took her to the room in that jet which was more like a bedroom. Jiang Yuyan was shocked to see a bedroom in a jet. Upon seeing her shocked, Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, “haven’t you just said, you want to feel the pain.”

Jiang Yuyan stepped back a little and said, “I..I didn’t mean it to happen right now. I was just saying it casually.” she had scared expressions on her face and thought, ‘Why she said it’. She never thought, the jet to have a bedroom and Lu Qiang could think about to do it in here, so she just said without thinking much, during their breakfast.

“Come inside.” Lu Qiang was enjoying her reaction and intentionally, he was behaving like he meant what he said. He offered her his hand which she accepted with hesitation and said, “We just had breakfast and my stomach is full.”

“So what?” he said casually and took her inside.

215 You Are Special..

Jiang Yuyan followed Lu Qiang quietly inside the bedroom in a jet. Once they reach the bed, Lu Qiang asked, “Are you ready?”

Jiang Yuyan gulped and asked, “Ready for what?”

“To experience the pain?”, he said with a mischievous smile on his lips.

“I told you, I just said it casually. I was not serious,” she said and took one step away from him.

Pulling her towards him with a little tug, by holding her wrist, he said while surrounding his arms around her, “But I am serious.”

She placed her palm on her stomach which looked a bit up and round, different from her usual flat one and said while signaling him to look at it, “See it’s full. Just a little pressure and everything would be out.”

Lu Qiang couldn’t help but laugh to see her cute reaction. He looked at her stomach which looked cute as it was full. He placed his hand on her stomach and said while caressing it, “In future, this part would be bigger in size with something else inside in it.”

Hearing it, she blushed and smiled. She understood what he meant but didn’t have a word to say. Lu Qiang hugged her tightly and said, “I will wait for the day eagerly when we have someone who would be the part of both of us. I wonder how it would feel to have that someone.”

Jiang Yuyan felt emotional to think, he actually thought about those things and was waiting for it. She looked at him and said while holding Lu Qiang’s face in her both palms, “I am sure, that someone would be like you and I would love it.”

“But I want him or her to be like you,” he replied and gave her a peck on the lips.

“Hmm! Okay! If it’s a boy, he should be like you and if it’s a girl, she should be like me. Is it fine?”, she asked with a pleasant smile on her face.

“I was thinking about only one but you planned for two. I don’t want you to go through the trouble for twice.”

“It won’t be a trouble. It would be my love for you and towards them,” she replied.

Hearing her touching words he felt amazed and said,
“Suddenly you are sounding like a mature person.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled to hear it and said calmly while staring into his eyes, “I am a woman after all and every woman thinks maturely when it comes to their family and especially kids.”

These words made him even more surprised with the word ‘Woman, family, and kids’ and he said, “What can I do with you. You never miss any chance to surprise me. You are a different person in different situations. You are caring, loving, shy, bold, scared, jealous, upset, angry then fight with me and now you are the one mature woman.”

“Don’t you like it?” she asked as she looked really different from her young girl image. She was talking like a responsible woman that every man would like to have in his life.

“I like everything that comes with you. All these different things together make you ‘my Yuyan’ and I don’t want you to change.” he replied with being content with her being with him.

“What if one day I change and become cold like an iceberg?” she asked.

“Then I would be there to meet you,” he said and kissed her.

Both talked for a long then had a rest. Once they landed in a capital, Lu Qiang took her to the home which he built for both of them. When they reached there, butler welcomed them. Upon seeing him, Jiang Yuyan secured the scarf around her neck and to see this Lu Qiang couldn’t help but smile slyly. It was noon when they reached and as Lu Qiang already informed their arrival to the house, butler prepared everything for both of them.

Lu Qiang didn't take her to the Lu mansion that day and Jiang Yuyan too didn't complain saying what others might feel. She decided to not think about others and just be happy with her man. Lu Qiang didn't go to the office and spent his time with Jiang Yuyan.

The last time when Jiang Yuyan came to this place, she was unaware of the thing that it would be her home but this time when she came to this place, she came with the feeling of being in her home. In her heart, she was happy to see it as her home, her and Lu Qiang's home. All the time, since she arrived home at noon, she had a pleasant smile on her face which showed how happy she was. Lu Qiang too was happy to see her smiling.

In the night, after dinner, they went out for strolling to see the view that Lu Qiang showed her last time she came here. She was happy to see it again. Everything was different this time as last time it was all surprise to her and he was more like a stranger to her. This time he was her man whom she loved a lot.

When they went back, Jiang Yuyan went to all the rooms to refresh her memories from the day of her birthday and felt like to be on cloud nine to remember all those beautiful memories and realized how much Lu Qiang loved her. When they went back to their bedroom, Jiang Yuyan was in her own thoughts and she was walking slowly behind him. she looked at his back and strode forward to back hug him.

Lu Qiang halted in his track to feel her delicate hands surrounding him and her delicate body touching to his back. Before he could ask anything she said, "Thank you so much, Lu Qiang."

He caressed her hands which were surrounding him, once she loosened her grip; he turned to look at her and asked, "What for?"

She looked into his eyes with her moist ones as she was overwhelmed with so many thoughts in her mind and replied, "For loving me so much and making me feel like I am very special."

“You are special Yuyan.” He said while holding her face in his both palms and caressing her cheeks with his thumbs.

“I am not but it’s your love that made me special.” Jiang Yuyan said and kissed him without giving him a chance to talk anything further.

This sudden kiss again surprised Lu Qiang as it was the second time when she was kissing him on her own and without giving him any hint. Lu Qiang came out of his surprised mode and kissed her back.

After sharing a long passionate kiss both were standing with Lu Qiang’s head resting on hers while panting heavily. Both looked at each other and smiled with what just they did. Lu Qiang tucked the hair strand behind her ear and said, “I don’t want you to feel the pain this soon so let’s go to sleep. You must be tired because of a journey too.” Both went to the bed and slept with Jiang Yuyan resting her head on his arm. He surrounded his other arm around her and fell asleep while facing each other.

216 She Is My Responsibility...

In Lu Mansion, nobody asked about the whereabouts of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan as they already guessed, both must be together. The next morning, after being ready, Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan left their home. Lu Qiang dropped Jiang Yuyan at the university before leaving for office.

In Ming Mansion, Ming Lan was ready to go to the university and she asked her brother Ming Rusheng to drop her as every day he did it. Ming Rusheng didn't want to go but thought of seeing Jiang Yuyan at least once, made him say 'Yes' to her.

When Ming siblings reached university, Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were already there while saying bye to each other. Ming Lan saw Lu Qiang and couldn't hold back her happiness and exclaimed. "Waah! Lu Qiang!"

Hearing his sister, Ming Rusheng felt annoyed and pressed the breaks of the car in an annoyance which made the noise of breaks screeching and stopped the car beside Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan. Ming Lan didn't notice her brother's reaction and stepped out of a car in a hurry to go towards Lu Qiang. She looked at her brother as she was scared to talk to Lu Qiang so she avoided to do it and just smiled to look at Lu Qiang to which he replied with the same.

Jiang Yuyan felt a bit awkward to see Ming Rusheng as he witnessed the kiss between her and Lu Qiang. Though she decided to avoid thinking about what others might think, she couldn't help but feel awkward. Lu Qiang noticed it and said to assure her, "It's fine."

Ming Rusheng left to see it and Lu Qiang too left once he made sure Jiang Yuyan went inside the gate. In the evening, when Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang came back home with Lu Lijun with them. Su Hui was in the living room with a few other family members. Nobody asked anything but Su Hui

couldn't hold back her curiosity. When she saw Jiang Yuyan, she asked, "Where were you since the night of the party? We all were worried."

Jiang Yuyan suddenly startled with her question and she didn't know what and how to answer. Lu Lijun shook Jiang Yuyan's hand and said, "Ignore her, she is the most annoying woman in this world."

When Lu Lijun said it, he didn't bother to lower his voice and almost everyone heard it. Su Hui didn't dare to say anything to Lu Lijun as Lu Qiang was there and she was aware that she was being nosy.

Lu Qiang smiled a little to hear it and ran his hand through Lu Lijun's hair. Lu Qiang avoided speaking as much as possible, as he too was aware of his aunt's nature. He wanted to answer on behalf of Jiang Yuyan but before that Lu Lijun did the job.

"As long as I know, we were not worried about her as we know she was safe and sound," Elder Lu said while looking at Lu Qiang with a smile on his face. He then looked at Su Hui and said, "and I think you should not worry about her too," Elder Lu replied in contrast to Su Hui's statement.

"But father...."

"Su Hui, stop being nosy. She is not a kid for you to ask her everything." Lu Chen stopped his wife before she could argue with his father.

"She is not a kid that's why I am worried. As she is staying with us here in Lu Mansion, she is our responsibility to look after her." Su Hui said with a serious tone.

The whole discussion was about Jiang Yuyan but she didn't know what to say and felt trapped.

Lu Qiang sighed and pinched the space between his eyebrows and said, "She was with me since that night. Do you want to know more, aunt Su Hui." Lu Qiang replied in a cold voice.

Su Hui felt shocked to hear it as she didn't expect Lu Qiang to answer it boldly and said, "With you? I...I was just being worried about her as she is..."

“You don’t have to feel worried about her anymore as I am here to do that. Also, she is only my responsibility not anyone else’s so if anyone has a problem with her, come directly to me instead of bothering her.” Lu Qiang said in a firm voice as a warning for everyone but especially his words meant for his aunt.

Su Hui couldn’t say anything further and others were calm as they knew how nosy kind of person Su Hui was. As nobody said anything, Lu Qiang passed his sight across Jiang Yuyan, signaling her something and stepped towards the staircase to go to his room.

Jiang Yuyan was still hesitant and stood in her place. Lu Lijun looked at her and said, “Elder brother signaled you to go to your room. Are you planning to stay here only? You should stop minding the useless words from a few people.” He said and took Jiang Yuyan with him by holding her hand.

Jiang Yuyan followed him like he was ordering her and she was bound to listen to him. She could feel, she always listened to what Lu Lijun said as he was another Lu Qiang for her. She never understood why she always listened to this little guy and what kind of effect he had on her.

Others were still smiling with what Lu Lijun said while Su Hui was sulking while looking at both of them. She couldn’t help but say, “What magic Jiang Yuyan has done that Lu Lijun who never even look at anyone other than his brother is taking her side and care for her too.”

“It’s not any magic Su Hui. Kids have better sense than us to identify the good person because they are pure by heart.” Zhao Shuang replied.

Though Ning Jiahui was elder to Su Hui, she always avoided arguing with her as the peace in their home was important to her. Everyone was aware of her nature so they always avoided paying attention to what she said.

Dinner was calm and peaceful as Su Hui didn’t say anything to offend anyone but she was observing the way Lu Qiang cared for Jiang Yuyan and she didn’t like it.

217 Ready To Get Surprise...

A month passed by and Jiang Yuyan was busy with her studies and mid-semester tests. Everything was going normally and without any problems. The whole month, Ming Rusheng came to drop Ming Lan to university just to take a glimpse of Jiang Yuyan but seeing Lu Qiang with her every time broke his heart. As much as he tried to avoid what he felt for her that much he felt restless. Till now he understood, Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were in love with each other and there was no way for him to get Jiang Yuyan.

There was a wedding in the city. The wedding was going to be the biggest celebration as it was between two powerful businesses families Qin and Song. It was a business benefiting marriage that was going to benefit both sides. Both the families were close to Lus so the whole family was invited for the wedding while they shared a business relation with Mings so the Ming family was invited too.

Lu Jinhai was friends with the head of Qin and Song group and they were friends with Jiang Peizhi too. From Lu Family, Lu Jinhai and Lu Chen, both brothers with their wives and Lu Qiang planned to attend the wedding. Because of business relations, Lu Qiang had to attend it. From Jiang's, Jiang Yang was busy in a hospital so they decided to send Jiang Yuyan to attend the wedding. From Mings, only Ming Rusheng and his father Ming Yusheng were attending a wedding.

The bride was from the Qin family while the groom was from Song Family. the Goom was a friend of Ming Rusheng and Lu Feng both. Groom forced Lu Feng to attend the wedding to which Lu Feng agreed and decided to attend it.

On the day of the wedding, Lu Qiang went to Jiang Yuyan's room after breakfast and said, "You have to go with me somewhere."

"Where?" Jiang Yuyan asked curiously.

"To get ready for the wedding," he replied.

Hearing the word 'Wedding' she exclaimed, "What? Wedding? How can we..."

"Calm down. Not our wedding. It's about the wedding between Qin and Song family and you are coming with me," he said to calm her down but he enjoyed it.

"Ohhh! You almost scared me," she said while patting her chest and exhaling through her mouth.

Seeing her reaction, he asked with his one eyebrow raised in a question, "Why? Don't you have a plan to marry me."

"It's not like that. I.. I was just startled with a sudden wedding thing. I am ..."

"I know you are not ready yet and it's okay. We don't have to rush for anything, As I told you before the wedding is just a formality and I already think of you as my wife. It's just that we are yet to consummate our marriage," he said to assure her but the last line made her stop breathing.

"Cough-Cough." Jiang Yuyan coughed and her face was red after getting the meaning of his words. Lu Qiang smiled to see her scared. It was not the first time when he was saying it but still, it didn't miss to scare her. Both already crossed the certain limits that nothing was hidden between them. Even after spending nights together for months, both were still waiting for the day when they would be one.

Lu Qiang wanted her to concentrate on her studies as she had exams that month and wished for her to do well in it. Lu Qiang didn't bother her at night and always took care of her by looking after her. He made sure that she should sleep well, study well and eat well. For a whole month, he did only this but there were few moments when both couldn't resist the temptation to get into each other's embrace and to share their intimate moments.

Lu Qiang took Jiang Yuyan with him to his designer friend. He had ordered him to prepare the outfits for both of them to attend a wedding. When Lu Qiang went to his friend's designer outfit showroom, he welcomed them. "Welcome, Lu Qiang." the designer moved his sight from Lu Qiang to Jiang

Yuyan who was standing beside Lu Qiang and said, “Ohh! If I am not mistaken, she is the one who gave me an opportunity to design something too pretty.”

Lu Qiang smiled to look at him and said, “You are right An Tian.” Lu Qiang then introduced Jiang Yuyan to An Tian saying, “He is the one who designed all your clothes and today’s outfit is designed by him too.”

Jiang Yuyan saw the brand logo on one of the walls and understood, all of her clothes bought by Lu Qiang came from here. Jiang Yuyan smiled to look at him with a little nod as saying hello to him and An Tian did the same.

Only An Tian and his few assistants were present there as Lu Qiang was the famous person and it was not a good idea to have other people there All arrangements were done by An Tian exclusively for Lu Qiang. Also, the place An Tian had was only meant for his VIP customers where he personally preferred to everything for them.

“Both of you please have seat and I will get the final outcome of my experiment on clothes designed for both of you.” An Tian went inside with his two assistants following him. One assistant came out and asked Jiang Yuyan to come with her. She looked at Lu Qiang as asking for permission. Lu Qiang nodded as saying go and she got up to follow the assistant.

When Jiang Yuyan went inside with assistant, An Tian came out and said, “All set for her. Now it’s your turn.” he took Lu Qiang to another room and helped him with his suit. Lu Qiang was looking amazingly handsome in a royal deep blue color tuxedo. He came out of the room once he was ready and he was waiting for Jiang Yuyan to come out.

218 Breath Taking Beauty...

An Tian went inside to check on Jiang Yuyan. When he saw her, he couldn't take his eyes off of her. He was in a bit of a shock after looking at such a pretty lady in front of him and he exclaimed, "I am feeling blessed to see my creation worn by a pretty lady like you. You totally justified my creation." He paused and said again after looking at her carefully, "Ohh! Correction! Actually, my creation justified the beautiful lady like you."

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yuyan didn't say anything. His words made her smile and blush that made her look even more beautiful and pure. Seeing her blushing, An Tian said to tease her, "I think you are going to give a heart attack to my friend. Come out and let's see his reaction." He stepped to go out.

Jiang Yuyan was excited to hear it but she was nervous at the same time. She followed An Tian to go out of the room.

Lu Qiang was waiting for her. An Tian went to him and signaled him to look into the direction where Jiang went before. Just as Lu Qiang moved his sight in that direction, he saw Jiang Yuyan coming out from the room and walking toward him.

Lu Qiang almost forgot to breath when he saw her. She looked like an Aphrodite in that royal deep blue color dress which had a tinge of purple in it like a shadow. It was sexy but elegant hollow backless lace evening dress with deep V neck having thin straps of lace on her shoulder.

The dress was stitched in a mermaid pattern with half the bottom side of a dress had blue net cloth on it. The dress was longer in the back side touching to the ground as spreading on the floor and following her with each step she took without interfering in her steps. The fitting was so perfect as it looked like the dress meant for her only showing all her curves.

Her golden brown hair was tied loosely with few strands of hair pulled towards the back of her head and secured with a

tiny diamond brooch which was the same as what Lu Qiang had on his suit.

Makeup was minimal to keep her innocent look as it is. Beautiful diamond tops in ears and delicate accessories in her hands made her look attractive. Those diamonds were shining just like her fair and radiant skin.

Each step towards Lu Qiang was making her heart beat faster with a nervous expression on her face. Lu Qiang who was looking at her like he was in a daze while almost forgot to breath was brought back to his senses by An Tian. He laughed to look at Lu Qiang's reaction though he already expected it but seeing him like this for the first time was something special.

An Tian patted Lu Qiang's shoulder and said, "Breath my friend."

Lu Qiang listened to what An Tian said but still couldn't avert his site from Jiang Yuyan. He Exhaled through his mouth and was ready for Jiang Yuyan to come closer to him. With her each step, his heart was running faster and faster.

When Jiang Yuyan reached him, she was nervous and she had a feeling of having butterflies in her stomach. She was looking into his eyes to see Lu Qiang's reaction but he didn't say anything. Instead, he stepped forward and kissed her lightly as to be careful about not to ruin her makeup or hair. He didn't care about the presence of An Tian there.

An Tian smiled to see Lu Qiang kissing her without any thought, but didn't disturb him. Once they parted away, An Tian said, "I was expecting few precious words from you to hear but what you did just now was more than that. It was the best way to appreciate the beauty of a lady and the hard work of a designer like me, by the person like President Lu."

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and Jiang Yuyan felt shy after what Lu Qiang did in front of An Tian. "You did the best job of your life, An Tian. From now on, you would be her personal designer. Whatever she will have, should come from your brand so brace yourself.

“Always at your service, my friend and from now on it would be also for Mrs. Lu.” An Tian replied to see this happy couple which made Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan smile. An Tian knew Lu Qiang since long back and he knew, Lu Qiang never had an interest in any woman before. When he saw Jiang Yuyan with him, An Tian was happy for Lu Qiang and realized, Jiang Yuyan is not an ordinary woman.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan both looked like ‘made for each other couple’ whom anyone would envy. Lu Qiang left for the wedding with Jiang Yuyan after saying bye to An Tian.

At the luxurious wedding hall in the city....

It was almost evening and guests started to arrive at the venue. All the famous people in the country arrived to attend it. People from all the sectors were invited there, from business, entertainment, media, sports etc. Media people were present with their mikes and cameras outside of the all to get and all the updates about the wedding and the guests attending it.

Almost all the guests arrived and a couple of the day was busy with the pre-wedding photo shoot with friends and family. Lu Feng and Ming Rusheng were there too as close friends of a groom. They had a common friend circle, so most of the time Lu Feng had to face Ming Rusheng but both were never friendly with each other. Ming Rusheng always tried to fill something toxic in Lu Feng’s mind which Lu Feng was aware of and felt annoyed most of the time.

Before the wedding could start, there was a movement outside of the hall that everyone was waiting for. A black Maybach arrived and the reporters present outside recognized whom it belonged to. The guards present to escort guests, open the car’s door. Lu Qiang came out of it. Seeing his car, every camera at the venue moved to capture his glimpses. All reporters were excited to capture him in their cameras.

When they saw Lu Qiang, they were a bit surprised to see Lu Qiang wearing a suit in a different color other than black. Their sites and camera never left Lu Qiang for a single moment.

When Lu Qiang came out of the car, he moved to the other door of the back passenger sit on another site. The door was opened by the bodyguard already but Jiang Yuyan was yet to come out from the car. Lu Qiang went to get her and offered her his hand.

All were looking at what was happening. Jiang Yuyan accepted his hand and came out of the car. Seeing a woman stepping out of Lu Qiang's car, everyone dropped their jaws in a shock. They immediately collected themselves and started to click pictures not missing any movement made by this beautiful couple.

219 He is Taken....

Jiang Yuyan was standing beside Lu Qiang, ready to go inside by holding his hand but, so many reporters with cameras, sounds of clicking pics and flash from them made her nervous. Lu Qiang held her hand and whispered in her ear while caressing the back side of her palm with his thumb, “When I am with you, you don’t have to feel nervous. Just think, only two of us are here and these people don’t exist anymore.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded lightly as saying yes. Lu Qiang turned and stepped in the direction of the wedding hall while tightly holding Jiang Yuyan’s hand in his. All were stunned to see this beautiful woman with Lu Qiang and couldn’t help make conclusions on their own.

“Is she his girlfriend?”

“Looks like it.”

“From which business family she might be?”

“Don’t know but looking at her, she looks someone from a prestigious family.”

“Yes, she is so pretty. No wonder, president Lu fell for her.”

“Yes and this is going to be blockbuster news for us. Let’s get all the information and their photographs.”

As much as reporters were curious and excited to know everything about Lu Qiang, as much they were curious and excited to know about this beautiful woman with Lu Qiang. Few reporters tried to come forward and ask Lu Qiang about her but bodyguards around stopped them and they didn’t get the answers.

From the car to the door of the wedding hall, Jiang Yuyan was walking with Lu Qiang while holding his hand. She looked elegant and beautiful lady beside the amazing persona of Lu Qiang and no one could take their eyes off of her. Amazed by her beauty, few reporters even forgot to take pictures and

continued looking at Jiang Yuyan as they were in a daze. More than Lu Qiang, they were excited to know about her.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan reached inside the wedding hall making their way through flashlights and noise of the click sounds from the cameras. Guests inside the hall were already aware of the chaos of reporters outside and they were ready to see what was happening.

When Lu Qiang entered inside a hall while holding Jiang Yuyan's hand, all were shocked to see it with their jaws dropped down, almost touching the ground. More than Lu Qiang, everyone's sight was fixed on the beautiful woman, walking inside while holding his hand.

Lu Qiang didn't pay attention to anyone and straight went to his parents while still holding Jiang Yuyan's hand. Jiang Yuyan was feeling even more nervous to see everyone's sight fixed in her direction and she held his hand even more tightly though being beside Lu Qiang made her feel calm.

Lu Feng and Ming Rusheng were standing with their common friends. When they saw, Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan together, they too couldn't move their sites from Jiang Yuyan.

"Wow! Who is that beautiful woman with your brother, Lu Feng?", one friend asked.

Lu Feng was still busy looking at Jiang Yuyan but this question from his friend brought him back to his senses and he realized, he should not look at her like this. On the other hand, Ming Rusheng couldn't help but say her name while his site fixed in her direction as he was under her spell. "Jiang Yuyan."

"Jiang Yuyan? Who is she? Never saw her before and never heard her name even," another friend asked when he heard Ming Rusheng.

"You don't have to know about her." Ming Rusheng replied coldly with his sight fixed on Jiang Yuyan.

"She is the future, Mrs. Lu Qiang." Lu Feng replied.

Hearing it, Ming Rusheng frowned and said, "She is not married yet, Lu Feng. So, don't say anything like it."

“She will soon, so be prepared for it.” Lu Feng replied which made Ming Rusheng clench his fists but before he could say anything, one of their friends spoke.

“Ohh! Whatever it is but one thing is for sure. Your brother has a good eye. She might take the limelight away from a bride. She is so beautiful.”

Upon hearing it, Lu Feng looked in the direction of Jiang Yuyan again as he couldn't stop himself from looking at her and involuntarily words came out from his mouth, “Indeed, she is!”

Ming Rusheng turned his head to look at Lu Feng and he noticed the way Lu Feng was looking at Jiang Yuyan and it didn't take him much time to understand what it was. Lu Feng sensed Ming Rusheng's gaze on him and immediately averted his sight from Jiang Yuyan to look in another direction.

Ming Rusheng smiled to look at him with one side of his lips curved upward and said, “I think, no one is immune to her. Even the rock heart people are melting.”

Lu Feng understood, Ming Rusheng caught him and almost cursed himself for not being able to control his feeling for Jiang Yuyan. He didn't let it show on his face and replied as showing, Ming Rusheng's words didn't bother him, “Yes! You are right and She was the only one who could melt my brother's rock solid heart.”

“I see. I thought he was not the only one with rock heart among Lus,” Ming Rusheng said again but this time Lu Feng ignored him.

Seeing Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan together, Lu Qiang's parents and his uncle had a wide smile on their faces while Su Hui didn't like it and ignored both of them.

Ning Jiahui stepped towards Jiang Yuyan and hugged her while saying, “You are looking so beautiful.” Then, she looked at her son and said, “You can let go of her hand now, Lu Qiang.”

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yuyan blushed. Both didn't realize, they were still holding each other's hands. Lu Qiang didn't

show on his face that he was a little surprised to not realize, he was still holding Jiang Yuyan's hand. He let go of her hand and stood beside his father.

220 Trying To Provoke...

When Lu Qiang stood beside his father Lu Jinhai, he patted Lu Qiang's back as saying 'Well done' to his son, for what he did. It was big news for the whole business world to see Lu Qiang with a woman. The way they entered the party, it was obvious for everyone to understand that Lu Qiang was taken and the woman who made it possible came there with him. It was the best thing he could do for his woman to make it known to the world.

The business families those who want their daughters to marry Lu Qiang were upset to see it, while all the single women around couldn't help but feel envious of Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan was with Ning Jiahui when Lu Qiang was surrounded by few guests there, to use it as an opportunity to talk business with him as it was always too rare to find Lu Qiang available to talk out of his office. Ning Jiahui's friends were there and all women surrounded her to satisfy their curiosity to know the woman arrived with Lu Qiang, though they already guessed it.

"Introduce the new girl to us, Ning Jiahui," one woman spoke.

Ning Jiahui was prepared to face their questions and spoke, "Ohh! Yes! She is Jiang Yuyan. Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan's daughter." Ning Jiahui replied as not wanting to say anything more.

"She looks close to your son." another woman asked with a fake smile on her face.

"Indeed, She is! They are childhood friends after all." Ning Jiahui replied as less as she could answer while Jiang Yuyan was feeling awkward to see these curious gazes on her.

"So they are just friends?", a woman asked again.

"It's between kids. What can I say about it as I don't like to be a nosy mother." Ning Jiahui replied with a mild smile on her face, hiding how annoying these women were sounding to her

ears. Her straight forward words, covered in her sweet smile were enough to make them stop asking more questions. They understood, she didn't want to talk about her son's personal matter and others should stop being nosy too.

Women wanted to ask more but that was Ning Jiahui, the mother of Lu Qiang whom nobody could dare to cross question. Though Ning Jiahui was a polite and easy going person, she never fell for these curious ladies. She always acted wisely throughout her journey in the business world with her husband.

It was not a big deal for her to tell them about the relationship between Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan but she wanted to wait for her son to declare it to everyone. Though the part of it, he already did without using a single word but through his action of bringing Jiang Yuyan with him and holding her hand in front of everyone, just official announcement was there to be done.

When these women were discussing Jiang Yuyan Su Hui didn't like it much but couldn't say anything because, like others, she too got the message that Jiang Yuyan was going to rule over Lu Mansion, soon. She didn't want to offend her as doing so was like offending Lu Qiang directly.

Guests took their seats and the wedding ceremony started. The luxurious and spacious hall was decorated in mostly white color decorative things and flowers with a red color somewhere in contrast. The stage was exactly opposite the entrance of the hall. Sitting arrangement was in circular tables with chairs around it, placed in rows, dividing the hall into two parts, leaving a way to walk from entrance to the stage.

Lu family sat together and Lu Qiang sat beside Jiang Yuyan. Still, so many gazes were following this beautiful couple. Lu Feng was sitting with his friends as he was among the groom's close friends. Ming Rusheng didn't stop looking at Jiang Yuyan but whenever his sight crossed by Lu Qiang, he felt frustrated.

When all were busy paying attention to the wedding ceremony, Ming Rusheng talked to Lu Feng in low voice. "Lu

Feng, don't you think, whatever Lu Qiang has today, that all could have been yours," he said as looking in the direction of Lu Qiang who was busy paying attention to the wedding.

Lu Feng looked in the same direction. When he saw Lu Qiang, he moved his sight back to Ming Rusheng and said, "I told you before. We all got what we deserve and I have got more than enough."

Ming Rusheng smiled to hear it and said again, "Stop consoling yourself like this, Lu Feng. You already know that you are more deserving and capable than him. We all know, you should be the one to lead the Lu corporation and the position of President belongs to you." Ming Rusheng then moved his sight from Lu Feng to Jiang Yuyan and spoke again, "Everything he has means not only the business but each and everything he has with him now."

Lu Feng sighed to hear it. He knew Ming Rusheng was trying to provoke him. "Everything Lu Qiang has, belongs to only him since the start, so stop saying bullsh*t. I know what you are trying to do but keep in mind, it won't work on me as I gave up on everything since long back."

"You are a very good man Lu Feng but sometimes, being good is a bad thing. I can help you to get it. If you are really not interested in something special so you just get Lu Corporation and I will get something else." Ming Rusheng said the last line while looking at Jiang Yuyan.

"Keep your eyes off of her, Ming Rusheng or it won't take me much time to take them out." Lu Feng was aware of Ming Rusheng's intentions but as they were in the middle of the wedding and between the whole business world, he controlled himself from doing anything harsh. He didn't want to do anything that can ruin Lu Families reputation.

Laughing om his reaction, Ming Rusheng spoke, "Ohh! I am so scared." He stopped laughing and said in a serious tone, "Chill Man! I don't want you to create a scene that will lead to ruin your image completely and in the future, you won't stand a chance to lead Lu Corporation. Trust me, I desperately want to see you there so I will stop just for your sake."

Lu Feng was annoyed to hear it but he kept silent as Ming Rusheng stopped what he was doing.

When the wedding started, Lu Qiang smiled to look at Jiang Yuyan who was sitting on his left side and held her hand which she placed in her thigh. He entangled his fingers with hers and sat like that. Jiang Yuyan too let him hold her hand and was smiling to have this new feeling when her man didn't care about the world to show his affection towards her.

221 Going To Our Home...

Soon the wedding ceremony came to an end with the bride and groom greeting all the guests, according to the custom. During dinner, Lu Feng joined Lu Family. He stood beside Lu Qiang and whispered, "Tomorrow morning, everyone is going to get breaking news and all the business families are going to cry."

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and said, "One day it was going to happen so why not today?"

"Hmm! Right!" He then looked at Jiang Yuyan and said with a pleasant smile on his face, "You are looking beautiful and both of you are looking great together."

Jiang Yuyan smiled to hear it but before she could say thank you, one voice disturbed them, "Indeed, she is, but it's not just today. She always looks beautiful."

All three looked at the source of a voice. Lu brothers felt annoyed while Jiang Yuyan had puzzled expressions on her face to see Ming Rusheng, suddenly. Ming Rusheng stepped towards Jiang Yuyan and said with a smile on his face, "You are looking like aunt Mu Ruolan. I remember when I was a kid and used to call her Pretty Aunt."

Upon hearing her mother's name, Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, "Thank you, brother Ming Rusheng." Ming Rusheng felt glad to see her smiling on his words and talking to him. By calling Mo Ruolan his aunt and telling the glimpse from his childhood, he was able to show how close he was with Jiang family and they were related by blood.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng didn't like it but they couldn't say anything as Ming Rusheng was Jiang Yuyan's maternal relative. They knew how close Jiang Yuyan's mother, Mo Ruolan was to the Ming family as the elder Ming was Mo Ruolan's maternal uncle.

Ming Rusheng was aware of Lu brother's situation. He smiled to see it and spoke again to Jiang Yuyan, "Grandpa was

missing you. It would be nice if you come to visit him once in a while.”

“Hmm! I will. Soon.” Jiang Yuyan replied.

Upon seeing her agreeing to his request he said, “Well. You can come with me after your classes when I will come to pick up Ming Lan,” He was ready to get his answer but someone broke his anticipation of hearing what he was expecting.

“No need to trouble yourself, Ming Rusheng. Whenever she would want to meet your grandpa, I will take her to your home.” Lu Qiang replied before Jiang Yuyan could answer him.

“You? My home? Are you serious?” Ming Rusheng asked surprisingly. Not just Ming Rusheng but Jiang Yuyan and Lu Feng were surprised to hear it too. All were aware of how much Elder Ming hate Lus because of some incidence in the past, so what Lu Qiang said was a bit shocking for them.

“Yes! I am serious, Ming Rusheng. Every important person in her life is important for me too, even if that person is your grandpa who hates my family.” Lu Qiang replied as indicating through his words that Jiang Yuyan belonged to him now.

“I am sure, you have a death wish. I hope you would be able to save yourself from my grandpa. If you won’t then I would be happier.” Ming Rusheng said and laughed.

Ming Rusheng’s words didn’t affect Lu Qiang a bit. He was calm and spoke again, “Wait for us to come to your home soon, Ming Rusheng. Then, let’s see if you get the chance to be happy or not.”

“We will wait for you, Lu Qiang.” Ming Rusheng replied and looked at Jiang Yuyan, “See you soon,” he said and left.

After having dinner and giving a newly married couple their blessings, guests started to leave the venue. Lu Qiang left with Jiang Yuyan but he didn’t take her to Lu Mansion and instead he took her to their home.

In Lu Jinhai’s car...

“Today I am so happy and proud of my son.” Lu Jinhai said with a wide smile on his face.

“I am feeling the same. They both looked adorable together.” Ning Jiahui replied.

Both were happy for their son that he was finally going to be happy in his life and he was doing something for himself.

In Lu Chen’s car...

“What Lu Qiang did, I didn’t like it. What is so special in that girl?” Su Hui exclaimed.

“What is bad in her? She is Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan’s daughter and we all know her since childhood. She is a perfect girl for Lu Qiang.” Lu Chen replied as to understand, Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were more than friends now.

“This is the problem that she is their daughter.” Su Hui murmured and kept quiet as she knew her husband won’t understand her.

In Lu Qiang’s car...

“Where are we going. It’s not the way to the Lu Mansion.” Jiang Yuyan asked while looking outside through the window and after recognizing they were not on the way to the Lu mansion.

“We are going to our home, Yuyan.” Lu Qiang replied.

“Our home? Why?”, she asked because Lu Qiang didn’t inform her before.

Lu Qiang held her hand and pulled her towards him to make her sit on his lap. He circled his one arm around her waist while with the other hand he caressed her cheek and said to look into her eyes, “Today my woman is looking out of the world and I am yet to take a proper look, till my heart’s content.”

Jiang Yuyan startled with his sudden move. When she was sitting in his lap comfortably and he said those words, she gulped as to understand what might be the possible meaning of his words.

Lu Qiang held her tightly closer to him which made her even nervous. She murmured, "We are not alone." As she said it, Lu Qiang pointed her to see to her backside.

she saw there was a partition frame between them and the driver which provide them privacy in a car. The driver was not able to see them and she was shocked to see when this happened.

222 Someone Is Being Horny...

The moment, Lu Qiang pulled Jiang Yuyan in his lap, the driver pushed one button in the car to put up a partition between them. Driver Xu Bai was with Lu Qiang since Lu Qiang started working in Lu Corporation. He was a few years older than Lu Qiang and he was a good friend with assistant Xiao Min. Like Xiao Min, Xu Bai was loyal to Lu Qiang too and he was happy to see his rock heart boss, finally in love with someone.

After noticing a partition, Jiang Yuyan looked back at Lu Qiang with a surprise but before she could say anything, Lu Qiang pulled her face towards him by moving his hand towards the back side of her head to pull it closer and kissed her. He started to suck and nibble her lips gently to feel them.

since the moment Lu Qiang saw Jiang Yuyan in An Tian's designer clothing's VIP showroom after she got dressed up, he felt like to devour her at the very moment. He thought to take her to their home straight, instead of attending a wedding but he controlled himself as he had already planned his first step to introduce Jiang Yuyan to the world as his woman.

Throughout the wedding, he could feel the gazes coming in her direction and he felt annoyed because, for him, Jiang Yuyan was his woman and only he had the right to admire her beauty. Once the wedding came to an end and the moment he finally got a chance to be alone with her, even if it was in his car, he couldn't control himself from kissing her like he was just waiting for this moment.

Upon feeling Lu Qiang's soft lips sucking and nibbling hers, Jiang Yuyan forgot what she was about to say and she too responded him back. His touch was the thing she never wanted to resist. His touch was like a drug to her. once she was addicted to it, she wanted it even more.

Jiang yuyan circled her right hand around Lu Qiang's neck and with the other hand, she was caressing Lu Qiang's cheek. Lu Qiang tightened his grip around her waist and his hand which was on the back of her head was pushing her face against his to allow himself to kiss her harshly.

Seeing her responding with the same passion Lu Qiang kiss became intense as if he wanted to engulf her completely. He was switching between her top lip to the lower one while biting and pulling them out with his teeth which was making her moan softly.

That moving car was filled with the sounds of their panting and moaning which was clearly heard by a driver. He immediately played a piece of music in the car to save himself from the awkwardness of hearing the lovemaking sounds of his boss and his future lady boss.

Coincidentally, the music was the romantic one which added fuel to the passion of these hungry lovers. Jiang Yuyan too wanted him as much as he desired for her. Jiang Yuyan wished to take control of the kiss. She held his face at a place and took over his top lip. She bit his lip which made him feel pain and he clutched her soft butt cheeks in his palms. Even if they were covered in her dress, he could feel how soft and round they were.

Jiang Yuyan slipped her tongue in Lu Qiang's mouth as taking control over him. Lu Qiang allowed her and started to play with her tongue too. Threads of saliva were visible with both of these trying to taste each other as much as they could.

Lu Qiang wanted to make her sit cross to him but her mermaid pattern dress was not allowing him to do that. Finally, he lifted her up a little and placed her on a seat and he was on top of her. Even though it was the luxurious and most expensive car, the space in it was not enough for both of them to be in a comfortable position. Still, it didn't stop them as the desire to get each other was more dominant than any other thing.

When lu Qiang placed her down. He moved away from her to give her space to adjust herself comfortably in a seat.

Removing his suit's jacket and bow he asked while catching his breath, "Are you comfortable?"

"Yes!" she replied and pulled Lu Qiang back towards her by holding his collar which surprised him.

When she was about to kiss him, Lu Qiang said, "Someone is being horny today."

"Don't you like horny me?" Jiang Yuyan asked with a mischievous smile on her face.

"I want to see the same Yuyan when I will take you to bed tonight." He spoke to show her his intentions for a night.

"With you, I can be like this every night," she said and kissed him again by pulling him towards her. Lu Qiang liked this new Jiang Yuyan and was enjoying every bit of her.

As Lu Qiang was on top of her, he took control and kissed her. His tongue was rolling with her in her sweet cavern to make her breathless. With the car moving ahead with each passing second, their kiss was becoming more and more intense

In a while, both parted away with their mouths wet with saliva. Their breathing was heavy and hot which they could feel against their skin. Lu Qiang didn't want to stop with only this much. He moved down towards her chest and passed his sight across the deep V-shaped neckline of her dress which was the most seducing and beautiful thing in it. He placed light kisses on the bare part in her deep neckline.

Jiang Yuyan felt his soft lips and hot breath against the skin of her chest which was seductive, making her curl her toes. Both forgot that they were in a car which was running on the streets of the capital. Lu Qiang wanted to unzip her dress to pull it down below her chest but he couldn't figure out, how to and said in frustration, "Damn An Tian! I am going to cut the price of this dress to half."

223 Both Are Insane In Love...

Lu Qiang wanted to unzip her dress to pull it down below her chest but he couldn't figure out, how to and said in frustration, "Damn An Tian! I am going to cut the money of this dress to half."

These lines from Lu Qiang made her smile and giggle. She was amazed to see how this simple thing like unzipping her dress could annoy him this much so she said while trying to hold back her giggle, "It's simple."

"It is simple for you but not for me. Why everything related to a woman is so critical?" He asked annoyingly.

"Just to annoy men like you by not giving them anything easily." She answered to tease him with a smile on her face as she found it funny to see this always calm person in a frustrated mode.

Lu Qiang agreed to her words and said, "Hmm! I can see that. Now help me to take it off."

"We are in a car. Once I take it off, It would be difficult to put it back." She said with worry in her voice.

Lu Qiang could understand her condition but he couldn't stop feeling annoyed as he had to stop their love moments. "Next time I will ask him to make all your dresses easily accessible."

His words made Jiang Yuyan laugh even louder. She couldn't hold it back this time. Lu Qiang was looking at her because of the way she was laughing. After so long since their childhood days, he saw her laughing with her heart open. He forgot what he was up to and he was looking at her. She had tears in her eyes with this much laughing. She looked at Lu Qiang who was looking at her like he was seeing something precious.

"What happened?" she asked while controlling her laugh.

“You look beautiful when you laugh. I want to see you like this always.” He replied and wiped her tears.

“Okay! I will be always like this as long as you are with me” she said while looking into his eyes with love for him in them.

“Then you will keep laughing at every moment of your life as I am not going to leave you for a single moment ever.”

“If it can make you stay with me for each and every moment of my life then I won’t mind laughing always even if others think that I am insane.”

“I think we both are insane in love,” Lu Qiang said and gave her a peck on the lips. Lu Qiang moved away from her and sat in his seat. He helped her to get up and sit then he said, “We can continue to rest in our home. Car is not that comfortable.”

Jiang Yuyan made herself sit comfortably and said while straightening her messy hair, “I wonder how they do things in a car? It’s very difficult to be comfortable here.”

“Do you want to check, how they do things in a car. I won’t mind to give you that experience as I really want to do it in the car with you, once.” He said while looking at her with his lips curved upward to show his dangerous intentions.

She gulped to hear it and said, “No need. I..I was just joking.”

Both sat in a car quietly with the smile on their faces. Soon the car reached to their home which Lu Qiang build for only both of them. Lu Qiang stepped out of a car without even waiting for a driver to open the door for him. He stepped towards the back passenger seat door on Jiang Yuyan’s side. He opened it and offered her his hand. she accepted it and stepped out of the car.

“Let’s go,” he said while holding her hand tightly and taking her with him inside the home. Lu Qiang was walking faster and Jiang Yuyan was trying to catch up with his speed.

Driver Xu Bai didn’t look at both of them and continued sitting in the car. when Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan disappeared from his sight, he stepped out of the car. He opened back passenger seat door and took out Lu Qiang’s jacket and bow from the car and stepped to go inside of the home.

Once Lu Qiang reached inside the home, A butler and few servants were present there to welcome them as Xu Bai already informed them about his boss's arrival. Everyone greeted Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan who entered the home while holding each other's hands.

Lu Qiang didn't reply back to their greetings as he didn't see or heard anything. Jiang Yuyan eyes met with butler's to which butler nodded as greeting her and looked down to not look at her again. Jiang Yuyan felt a bit embarrassed but quietly followed Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang took Jiang Yuyan straight upstairs to their bedroom like he was in a hurry for something important. Butler understood and he asked other servants to go back to their rooms and rest as it was a late night. In a while driver, Xu Bai came inside and he handed over Lu Qiang's jacket and bow to the butler and left.

Once they reached the bedroom only then Lu Qiang slowed down his walking pace and finally Jiang Yuyan got the chance to catch her breath. He stopped in the center of the room and stood while facing her.

Jiang Yuyan looked at him while trying to calm herself down by breathing deeply. Lu Qiang understood he made her walk fast with him and she is tired. He looked at the glass jar on the table which was filled with water. He stepped towards it and filled one glass with water for Jiang Yuyan.

He went back and offered it to her. Jiang Yuyan said thank you and took only two to three sips of water. All this time Lu Qiang was staring at her face. She gulped to see his intense sight and stood frozen on her place with a glass in her hands.

Lu Qiang took that glass from her hands and drank the remaining water while still staring in her eyes. His sight didn't move from her face for even a single moment. He stepped back to keep the glass on the table.

224 Why Are You So Beautiful?

Once Lu Qiang put the glass on the table, he turned to look at Jiang Yuyan but he didn't go to her directly. He stood near the table at a distance of four to five ft away from her while staring at her from a distance to take a proper look at her. Jiang Yuyan was feeling nervous with the way he was looking at her without saying a single word since they came inside the home.

Lu Qiang's sight started to observe her from her hair to go down from her eyes, nose, lips, chin to her neck and it was making Jiang Yuyan feel even more nervous. He looked like he was trying to capture everything in his eyes.

The moment his sight moved from her neck to her chest and stopped there, Jiang Yuyan's breath became heavy and she clutched her dress in her both hands on either side of her thighs while looking at him.

Lu Qiang moved his sight from her chest to go down from her stomach while observing her curves in that beautiful mermaid fitting dress. once he finished observing her till her toes, Lu Qiang stepped to his right side to move around her in a circle to observe her from every angle.

Jiang Yuyan was standing frozen in her place to let him do what he was doing. His each step moving around her while staring at her was making her heart to beat faster. While moving in a circle with his sight fixed on her he reached behind her. Her beautiful golden brown hair, long till her elbows, tied loosely with a diamond pin, left open to cover her beautiful back.

Lu Qiang passed his sight along her back till the floor. Her bare back half covered with her loosely tied hair was looking curvy and alluring that he couldn't stop himself from going closer to her.

He strode towards her and stopped just a few inches away from her that she could feel his hot breath on the skin of her shoulder which made her exhale through her mouth. Lu Qiang moved her hair to one side to see her fair and slender back in a backless dress which ended just above her waist.

He moved her hair on her shoulder, allowing them to fall on one side of her chest and started to trace her bare back with his fingers along her slender back bone. “Why are you so beautiful that I don’t want to stop myself whenever I see you,” he couldn’t stop himself from praising her beauty which made his heart heart to beat faster whenever he saw her.

Touch of his fingers on her bare back with his words, passed a shiver run across her spine and she held her breath. She had goose bumps all over which Lu Qiang noticed and whispered in her ears, “You are still so sensitive to my touch. I haven’t done anything yet.”

Jiang Yuyan exhaled through mouth to calm herself down and replied, “What you are doing right now is still enough to give me goosebumps.”

Lu Qiang again whispered in her year, “Really?” he then looked at the back of her dress and said, “Let me see how to get rid of this thing on your beautiful body.”

Lu Qiang looked at the back side of her neck. The dress was secured behind her neck with buttons to support front part of dress as it was backless one. Lu Qiang finally understood how to get rid of her dress. Without waiting for a moment he unhooked those thin strips tied behind her neck and top of her dress slipped down.

Jinag Yuyan held the top in her hand to keep covering her breasts. “You don’t have to bother yourself with this dress, let it go. I don’t want anything to come between us now.” Lu Qiang said to look at her when she held her dress.

Jiang Yuyan hesitantly let go of the dress. It was not new for her what both of them were doing but his passionate behavior and the way he looked at her with intense gaze never missed to pass shiver across her body. His each move seemed to be new to her that made her gasp every single moment.

Yet the lower part of the dress was still fixed on her waist. Lu Qiang was standing behind her. He moved his hand across her curvy waist and stopped at the lower part of her back to unzip the dress there.

He pulled the zipper down which loosened the dress and her round butt cheeks were visible to him. Lu Qiang pulled her dress a bit down which made it fall in her feet. She was in just her panty now. Jiang Yuyan's heart was running faster and she felt heavy in her chest which made her breath deeply.

Upon seeing her reacting in the same way like before, Lu Qiang whispered again, "We are not doing it for the first time so relax."

Jiang Yuyan nodded to what he said and she tried to calm herself down. Lu Qiang removed the diamond brooch from her hair to open them completely and put that brooch in his pocket as he didn't want to move away from her to keep it somewhere on the table.

Lu Qiang turned her around to stand face to face with her. She looked at him with her scared eyes. Lu Qiang smiled to see her scared and said while tucking her loose hair strand behind her ears, "I will just go as far as you can take it don't be scared."

In her heart she was always ready to do everything but still she couldn't stop feeling anxious whenever that moment came. In a car it was different thing as she knew they won't be able to do much so she acted boldly but whenever she was alone with him like this, she couldn't help but feel anxious scared nervous and what not.

225 Because You Are My Life...

Upon hearing his assuring words, Jiang Yuyan nodded. Lu Qiang pulled her towards him with a slight tug to get her out of the dress lying on the floor, around her feet. Once she was out, Lu Qiang signaled her to see towards his shirt as asking her to take it off.

Jiang Yuyan obediently started to unbutton his shirt while Lu Qiang was staring at her face. She could sense his intense gaze on her. She kept looking at his eyes in between after unbuttoning each button which was making her heart jump out of her chest.

Once she unbuttoned the shirt completely, Lu Qiang removed it and threw it on the floor without caring where it would fall. Jiang Yuyan looked at his strong and muscular chest and couldn't hold back the temptation to touch it.

She ran her fingers across his chest and felt how strong it was but she couldn't understand why she was feeling so attracted to it and what was this different kind of feeling. She wanted to touch it, sniff into it, kiss and lick it.

Lu Qiang let her touch his chest while observing her reaction. He leaned closer and said in a low and hoarse voice with his lips almost touching her earlobes, "This is how I feel when my sight falls on your chest. I feel like to devour it at the very moment."

Jiang Yuyan didn't know how to reply to him. She was busy in processing her own inner feelings but just then Lu Qiang whispered in her ear again, "I want to see that horny Yuyan again whom I saw in the car.

Jiang Yuyan didn't know what she did in the car. She just wanted to do what she was feeling at the moment. She moved her face towards his chest and placed light kisses on his chest. She sniffed into it and said, "You smelled really seductive.

Since the first day I met you, I was affected by this manly scent of yours which always made my head go fuzzy.”

Lu Qiang smiled to hear her saying it clearly as he never thought there could be something like this. Jiang Yuyan didn't stop just on his chest. She moved her hands along his broad shoulders and to his abs too.

Touch of her hands and the way she was kissing and licking his chest, made Lu Qiang to close his eyes and to breath heavily. From his chest, she moved to his neck and started to suck and nibble his skin while tiptoeing. Lu Qiang supported her by holding her waist but soon his one hand moved to the back of her head to run his fingers through her hair golden brown hair.

Once Jiang Yuyan had done kissing and sniffing his chest and neck to her heart content, she moved her hands towards Lu Qiang's pants. She unbuckled his belt, pulled it out and threw it on the floor. As she was about to unbutton his pants, Lu Qiang held her hands to stop her.

Jiang Yuyan looked at him surprisingly to know why he stopped her. “If you remove it, we might do the things for what you are not ready yet.” Lu Qiang said to see her puzzled expressions.

Jiang Yuyan understood what he meant but she didn't retreat her hands and said, “I don't mind.”

“I know but I am not ready to hurt you yet and I am not even ready to see you in pain.” Lu Qiang replied while still holding her hands.

For him, Jiang Yuyan just came out of her painful past and she had just started to accept the things so he didn't want to rush for anything. Also, he didn't want her to go through any kind of a painful experience just because of him and that too, so soon, as he was afraid she might hate it again. Moreover, he was a bit scared to see her in a pain like last time when he tried to cross that line with her.

Jiang Yuyan knew, he was being careful with her since that night when she felt pain but she didn't want him to stop just

because of it. “I know you are afraid to see me in pain like last time but it’s okay. I will bear it. I....”

Before she could say further, Lu Qiang held her face in his palms and kissed her to stop her from saying anything further. He parted away and said, “Don’t say anything. Just wait for some time more.”

Lu Qiang knew she was scared and she was just trying to be brave for his sake. Jiang Yuyan nodded and kissed him back.

Their passionate and breathless kiss ended up in a bed when Jiang Yuyan was lying in a bed with Lu Qiang on top of her. When they parted away both were panting heavily with their eyes closed and feeling each other’s hot breath against their skins.

“Lu Qiang!” she called his name while panting and trying to catch her breath.

“Hmm?” he asked, trying to understand what happened.

“Why do you care for me so much. We are so close so why don’t you ever try to do the thing that you are stopping yourself from,” she asked while looking into his pitch black eyes.

“Because you are my life and isn’t it right to care for your own life,” he replied

“But we can do it. I will be fine. Trust me.”

Jiang Yuyan was aware, he was trying hard to hold himself back but as she had accepted her feelings for him, she didn’t want him to hold back and suffer. She knew how much he loved her and how long he waited for her.

“I know but let’s keep it for later and till then we can use other ways to please each other without letting you feel the pain.”

Lu Qiang said and parted her legs away by using his one leg. Jiang Yuyan let him do it without feeling shy this time.

Upon seeing her permitting him easily Lu Qiang shook his head and said, “Tsk! This is not fun anymore.” He stood up to get out of the bed and went straight towards his wardrobe

226 You Will Ask For More....

Jiang Yuyan had a puzzled expression on her face to see why Lu Qiang got out of bed suddenly. Lu Qiang walked towards his wardrobe and opened it. He pulled a drawer which had so many different ties in it, folded in a circular fold pattern and all were back. He took out one tie and closed the wardrobe.

Lying in a bed, Jiang Yuyan's sight was following Lu Qiang all along till he came back to the bed with a black tie in his hands. On his way back to the bed, Lu Qiang opened the tie by holding it's one corner which made the tie to unfold and to fall straight downward. He held it tightly by circling it to his both palms like a rope.

Tugging a tie in his hands, he stepped towards the bed. Jiang Yuyan gulped to see it. She was about to get up from a bed but Lu Qiang stopped her and said, "Calm down, you will like it. Trust me."

Listening to him, Jiang Yuyan laid back in a bed with lots of questions in her mind.

Lu Qiang sat on the edge of the bed beside her and said, "Give me your hands."

"W..why?", she asked as she felt scared to see the tie.

"I am not going to hurt you but I am going to do something that both of us will enjoy so give me your hands, Yuyan," he said looking in her eyes. In his calm and caring voice, there was a tinge of an order too.

Jiang Yuyan was scared but she trusted him a lot so she put forward her both hands obediently and she was ready to see what Lu Qiang was going to do.

Lu Qiang circled a tie tightly around her wrists and tied her hands above her head to the headboard of the bed. She gulped to realize what Lu Qiang was doing. After securing her hands,

Lu Qiang looked back at her and caressed her cheeks. “You would be fine trust me” and gave her a light peck on the lips.

He went on top of her again and trailed kisses till her neck and started to suck and bite her skin while nuzzling into the crook of her neck. Soft moans came out of her mouth while feeling scared deep down in her heart.

He moved further down and played with soft and pink peeks on her chest. He kissed them, suck them, bite them and kneaded them with both of his hands, till his heart’s content leaving her all breathless and wanting for more.

When he was playing with her bosoms, Jiang Yuyan wanted to respond back by running her hands through the back of his head. She wanted to pull him towards her as she had an urge to kiss him but her hands were tied to do anything at the moment other than moaning and panting loudly with her hand gripping the tie tightly and her toes curled in a mattress. She was helpless so she had to leave herself in the valley of his desires but she started to like it.

Lu Qiang was looking at her while using his skills on her and he felt aroused to see her reaction which made him do it even more. Leaving her gasping for air, he went down further and kissed her while nuzzling into the cotton soft skin on her stomach.

In reflex to it, she pulled muscles of her stomach inside. Her core was shaken and she wanted it even more. Her legs started to rub against Lu Qiang’s body as he was in between them.

Lu Qiang held her legs with his hands on either side and put them in a place. He looked at her and said, “I think I should have tied them to the bed too.” Those words made her feel scared as she couldn’t imagine herself tied with a legs under the shadow of his wild desires.

Lu Qiang smiled to see her scared and said, “but let’s keep it for next time.”

Keeping her legs in a place, He moved his face towards the inner side of her thighs and traced light kisses towards her sex

while caressing her thighs with his hands. Each kiss from him was leaving her breathless as he was moving towards her core.

Once Lu Qiang reached there, he placed a light kisses on her forbidden place which was hiding under expensive and beautiful blue lace panty which made her shut her eyes tightly.

Lu Qiang nuzzled into her cave to smell her erotic aroma. Feeling aroused with her erotic scent, he tore out that last tiny piece of clothing on her body without giving a second thought. He realized she was already wet which was not surprising for him though.

He looked at Jiang Yuyan who was panting heavily with her eyes closed. He parted her lips between her thighs with his fingers and ran his tongue inside to reach her nub. With the touch of his fingers, she gasped and held her breath while clutching tie in her hands, being ready for the next sensation.

The moment Lu Qiang's warm tongue touched her inside, She couldn't help but moan loudly and the moment he swirled his tongue around the nub, she cried out his name, "Lu Qiang" clenching her legs together with her back moved up in the air.

Lu Qiang lifted his head to look at her. She too looked at him to know why he stopped. "It's just a start, my love. Later you will cry out my name again and again and you will ask for more," He said and buried his face again between her legs to suck her dry.

Jiang Yuyan was moaning loudly as not to understand what to do. She was rubbing her both legs in a mattress with her back arched in air.

Once Lu Qiang felt she was wet enough, he moved his head back and sat up in between her legs. When Jiang Yuan looked at him with her moist eyes to see what he was up to, he put his forefinger in his mouth while gazing at her with his intense sight. After soaking it in his own saliva he pulled it out of his mouth and slowly inserted inside her cave while staring into her eyes to see her reaction.

227 Do You Want More?

Jiang Yuyan's body flinched to feel his finger inside her and she gasped for air while making a sound from her throat with her lips still parted away. Looking at her, Lu Qiang started to move his finger slowly while rubbing her nub with the thumb.

Jiang Yuyan started to moan loudly with each thrust of his finger. She couldn't stop those seducing sounds coming from her mouth even though she tried to stop them.

Lu Qiang continued working his finger inside but suddenly he stopped his finger from moving in and out. He worked it in another way by circling his finger inside her vagina as he was trying to find out something hidden inside.

Soon there was a moment when Jiang Yuyan responded to the touch of his finger at a particular spot inside her. It was similar to the reaction she gave whenever he touched her knob. Lu Qiang tried again to make it sure and there was the same reaction again. He smiled to see it, leaned over her and whispered in her ear, "Congratulations to have that mysterious G spot, my love. I think I just hit it."

Jiang Yuyan's fuzzy mind was not able to understand anything but the pleasure she was experiencing inside in her core. Biting her top lip while pulling it out with his teeth Lu Qiang worked his finger inside at the same spot.

He started to assault her both lips by sucking and nibbling them in between to tease her which was arousing her, even more, to drag her towards her release and soon she was on her peak. Realizing it, Lu Qiang whispered in his hoarse voice in her ear after biting her ear lobe lightly, "Let it go, Yuyan."

"Ahhh! Lu Qiang." She cried out his name again with her head moved back in a pillow, her back arched in the air with legs folded at the knees, her toes curled and buried in mattress while clutching the tie in her hands tightly to lift herself up from the mattress with its support.

In a moment, she fell back in a mattress panting heavily with her body covered in the beads of sweat. She felt like she just landed on earth after floating in the air for long. She was tired but happy at the same time. This feeling of pleasure was too sweet for her and it was even better than what she felt on her first time.

Lu Qiang moved away from her and pulled out his finger to let her calm down to let her feel every bit of her release. Once she was calm he said, “Are you ready for the next round?” he said and licked his finger drenched in her fluid.

Jiang Yuyan widened her eyes and asked, “W..what?”

“We are not done with only this much. There is more. Let’s see how much you can take it.”

Jiang Yuyan tried to free her hands and said, “N..No..I am.....”

“Shhh!” Before she could say no again Lu Qiang hovered over her and stopped her by putting his just licked finger on her lips. “Don’t you liked what I just did?”

“I did but...”

“Only once is not enough. Let’s go for more,” he said and kissed her again without giving her a chance to say yes or no. As Lu Qiang slid his tongue in her cavern, Jiang Yuyan forgot, she was trying to stop him and kissed him back.

Once he filled the content with the kiss he moved back and flipped her on her stomach. Jiang Yuyan was lying on her stomach while facing her back to him. She was surprised by this sudden move.

Lu Qiang hovered over her fair back and kissed her on shoulders lightly. He moved up and kissed on her cheek. As she was about to say something, Lu Qiang turned her face to one side and kissed her again.

He was hard too and while kissing he was rubbing her manhood to her soft butt cheeks with his hands moved under her chest to grab her both peaks. Her hands were tied and she had no other option to follow him though she wanted to free her hands to touch and to feel him, the way he was doing with her.

Once he was done kissing and let her breath she said, “I want to touch and feel you too. Free my hands.”

“Not now. Today is your day, love.” Saying it, he moved back a little and ran his hands over her fair slim and seductively alluring back. He started to kiss and suck the skin of her back leaving marks on her it while kneading her bosoms. The way he was biting her skin was a bit painful for her but it was arousing at the same time.

While burying her face in between her hands tied to the headboard, Jiang Yuyan was making arousing sounds from her throat. Tracing the kisses along her back, Lu Qiang moved down towards her soft, round and fair butt cheeks.

He placed light kisses on them while kneading it with his hands. He moved to the back of her thighs while kissing them gently. While kissing the inside of her thighs he moved his sight up to look at her swollen lips which were hiding between her thighs.

Lu Qiang ran his fingers through her already sensitive and swollen lips. Feeling his touch she moved her back little up to let him touch it. It surprised Lu Qiang and he said, “Looks like you are ready again.”

Jiang Yuyan blushed to hear it but what he said was the truth. He started to move his fingers through her lips while rubbing her nob and moved upward to whisper in her ear, “Do you want more, love?”

Jiang Yuyan was shy to answer his question. She buried her face back between her hands and kept silent.

“I will take it as you don’t want it” saying it, he retreated his fingers.

228 Tired With Pleasure...

“N..No.. I want it,” Jiang Yuyan said to realize that Lu Qiang had retreated his fingers and he was serious. Upon hearing her, Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, “Good girl.” he moved back to the south and lift her back up. He made her fold her legs in knees so that her waist would be in the air. He lied down on his back and his face was below her lower back just below her forbidden zone.

Lu Qiang adjusted her feet to lower her back down so that he can reach to her cave while lying down below her. Jiang Yuyans helped him to adjust comfortably between her folded legs, between her thighs under her lower back while taking support of her knees. Her hands were still tied in a tie with headboard. As she lifted her back with the support of her knees she had to lift her upper body with the support of her elbows. She could see by lowering her head what Lu Qiang was up to.

Lu Qiang held her soft butt cheeks in his hands and pressed his mouth against her sex. He sucked it as he was about to swallow her completely which made Jiang Yuyan to press and rub it against his face as wanting for more asking him to do it roughly.

Lu Qiang moved his tongue up and down again while pressing hard against the inside of her lips. He grabbed her nub in his teeth and and tugged it that made her cry out his name again. “Ohh! Lu Qiang.”

Saying his name was like a release to her. Also, as if, it was her way of reciprocating his efforts to please her.

Jiang Yuyan wanted to say something more but words stopped in her mouth as moans of pleasure took over it. Lu Qiang moved his both hands from her butt cheeks to her cave and parted her lips to make a way for his tongue to enter inside her cave. He tried to push his tongue inside as much as he could

while licking and sucking her voraciously, as the softness inside was making him do it even more.

Jiang Yuyan was again getting closer to her release for the second time. She was stroking her back against his mouth lightly as she was about to come and wanted him do it hard. Upon understanding her signal, Lu Qiang grabbed her both butt cheeks in his hands and pressed his mouth against her sex to do it in rough way sucking, licking and pulling out her nub with his teeth. While working his tongue inside again, he inserted his finger inside to free his tongue to play with her nub.

He started to move his finger in and out and circling inside in between while sucking her nub. The moment he sucked it hard, pulling it out, Jiang Yuyan found her release while crying out loudly with her head moved back in the air and her back curved up. Soon she fell back with her in mattress with her face buried in a pillow in between her both arms which were tied. She was panting heavily covered in sweat.

Lu Qiang moved out from below her back and let her rest in a mattress on her stomach by letting her straighten her legs. She was tired and looked completely out of energy. Lu Qiang moved to her hands and freed them by removing a tie. Once she was calm she turned on her back but her eyes were too heavy to be able to open them completely.

Keeping a tie on the bedside table, he asked while looking at her hazy eyes, "Are you fine now?" As she nodded saying 'Yes', Lu Qiang moved back to her and said, "Let's go for another round."

Upon hearing it she couldn't help but exclaim, "What? No!.. No way. I can't, anymore."

"Trust me you can." He said, kissed her again and moved back between her legs.

"No more Lu Qiang. I will die now." She tried to stop him by showing how tired she was.

"No one die with this, Yuyan." He said and started to work between her legs, avoiding her pleading. This time her hands

were free but she was out of energy to use them against him. She wanted to clench her feet together to stop him but he held them tightly and said, “We have tie over there. If you want I can tie your leg this time and wont stop doing it till morning.”

Lu Qiang’s words scared her and she kept her legs on his either side the way he wanted. The moment Lu Qiang touched her and worked on her sensitive spots, she was again ready to go through it, forgetting she was pleading for no more, just a few moments before.

Lu Qiang made her go through another three rounds even though she pleaded for no more. After fifth round she was dead tired and fell asleep.

Seeing her tired and sleepy, Lu Qiang kissed her on the forehead with a smile on his face. He went to the bathroom to take a cold shower and relieved himself while crying her name out in his hoarse voice and panting heavily. Once he had done his things, he came out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around his waist and small tub of water in his hands. He put that tub on the bedside table and went to wardrobe to take out a napkin from it.

Lu Qiang cleaned her sweaty body with a wet napkin. She was in a deep sleep that she didn’t know what was happening. When Lu Qiang cleaned her between her legs, he saw her lips were swollen and red because of his fingers and tongue’s assault. He cleaned it carefully not to hurt her but even in her sleep she whined to feel pain when Lu Qiang touched to clean her with napkin.

Once he had finished cleaning her, he put on night dress on her. He too put on his pajamas and lied down beside her. He pulled over a quilt on both of them and took her in his arms like she was a kid. Placing a light kiss on her forehead, he said “good night, Yuyan!” and slept with her.

229 History Is Repeating Itself!

Next morning...

Jiang Yuyan was lying in a bed on her one side while looking at the man sleeping beside her. She was smiling to look at him and decided to tease him by running her forefinger across his face. She moved her finger from his forehead along the nose and as she reached to the lips, a man grabbed her hand, turned towards her in a hurry and pinned her in a bed under him.

She was still looking at him with a smile on her face as she was not surprised by his actions. He looked into her eyes with his lustful ones and leaned towards her smiling lips. He was about to kiss her, just then the phone beeped and a man sleeping in a bed opened his eyes while panting heavily.

He looked at his either side to search for Jiang Yuyan but she was not there. He sat up in bed and ran his hands through his hair as realizing it was a dream. “Jiang Yuyan! Why are you torturing me?” He exhaled through his mouth and got out of bed in an annoyance after throwing a quilt to one side.

Ming Rusheng straight went to the bathroom to get a cold shower to get rid of whatever wild thoughts he was having about Jiang Yuyan. He stood under the shower for a long time with his eyes closed and head down while the water flowing down across his body. How much he tried, he couldn't stop thinking about her which forced him to relieve himself and finally he was calm.

He didn't want to think about her. As realizing she was interested in Lu Qiang, he tried to accept the fact but it was not easy for him. The more he tried and decided to not think about her, the more his thoughts were running towards her. He was hating it but he couldn't stop or control himself from getting attracted to her.

When he came downstairs for breakfast, Ming Lan was looking at the newspaper which had half page long pic of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan together, holding each other's hands in last night's wedding ceremony. Ming Lan had sad expressions on her face but at the same moment, she was aware that she could never be with Lu Qiang even if she liked him a lot, thanks to the hatred of her grandfather and father towards Lu family.

Ming Rusheng saw the newspaper in her hands. He saw the picture and he had thought to tear it out at the very moment. His sight followed his sisters face and he noticed she was sad. He sat beside her and asked, "Did you like him that much?"

"Hmm! He is special and different," Ming Lan said those words immersed in her own thoughts. She didn't realize what and to whom she was saying it.

"What is so special about him." Ming Rusheng asked again.

"She was still staring at the picture and said, "I don't know but....." she stopped after realizing, she was saying something without even knowing what she was doing and the person she was talking to, was her brother.

"Cough-Cough! Brother! When did you come here." she asked with an embarrassed and scared face.

"When you were immersed in your own thoughts about that idiot," he replied and grabbed the newspaper from her hands. Ming Lan didn't say anything and kept quiet. Just then a white luxury car arrived in a Ming Mansion and a man entered inside in a while.

"Uncle Zhang Wei!" Ming Rusheng exclaimed to see his maternal uncle and went to welcome him. Ming Rusheng was close to his uncle as Zhang Wei always treated him as his own son.

"How have you been Ming Rusheng?" Zhang Wei asked and went towards the sofa in the living room along with Ming Rusheng.

Ming Lan too stood up from her place and greeted her uncle. As Zhang Wei sat on the sofa his sight fell on the newspaper.

He picked it up and looked at the picture in it. “Who is the girl with this boy?”

“That’s Jiang Yuyan. Aunt Mo Ruolan’s daughter,” Ming Rusheng answered while having a softness in his eyes and a voice when he said her name.

“Hmm! Jiang Peizhi’s daughter. Are they engaged or what? I never heard that boy being with any girl or being engaged.”

“They have not engaged uncle, they were just together last night,” he said in a little annoyance in his voice which his uncle didn’t fail to notice. Also, the way Ming Rusheng was looking at the picture of Jiang Yuyan was noticed by him too.

Zhang Wei smiled with one corner of his lips curved upward and said, “Looks like history is repeating itself again.”

“What do you mean uncle.” Ming Rusheng asked feeling puzzled with his uncle’s words.

“Nothing Ming Rusheng just remember you are like my son and I won’t ever let my son lose.” Zhang Wei replied and put the newspaper back.

Ming Rusheng was about to ask his uncle what he exactly meant, just then a voice disturbed him. “I think we should keep kids away from the things in the past, Zhang Wei.”

“Elder sister! How have you bean.” Zhang Wei avoided what his sister Zhang Jei said and stepped towards her to greet her.

As Zhang Wei reached to her, she said with a serious tone, “I hope you understood what I meant.”

“Sister! It’s our duty to look after the happiness of our kids.” Zhang Wei again avoided the seriousness she had in her words and on her face.

Zhang Jei knew her brother well and she was aware, he could go to any extent because of the hatred in his heart. “The happiness which comes by hurting someone is not worth it,” she said again.

“To make others happy, sacrificing your happiness is not worth too, elder sister,” he replied again not minding her words.

“If sacrificing yourself alone can make everyone happy and if it can help to maintain peace then it’s always worth it Zhang Wei, but you won’t understand it just as you couldn’t understand it in the past too.” Zhang Jie said with anger in her eyes as he was not ready to listen to her and her words were harsh for him.

Ming Rusheng and Ming Lan were looking at their mother and uncle with puzzled expressions and questions in their minds. They couldn’t understand what and why they were talking to each other without any context.

Upon hearing his sister’s words, Zhang Wei felt angry but he couldn’t say anything to her as she was right. Still, Zhang Wei was being stubborn and he didn’t want to accept the fact. He was about to say something but just then, they heard footsteps and looked in its direction.

That was the elder Ming and his son Ming Yusheng, coming downstairs for breakfast. Seeing them, Zhang siblings kept quiet and all went for breakfast. After breakfast when they came back to the living room. Elder Ming saw the picture in the newspaper but didn’t react. Ming Yusheng too looked at the picture but didn’t utter a word to look at his father and others did the same as they knew, talking about Lus was forbidden thing for Mings.

230 Trying To Know The Past...

Ming Rusheng came out of the mansion to see off his uncle, Zhang Wei. He was immersed in his own thoughts with so many questions in his mind. "Uncle!" he called while walking side by side with Zhang Wei towards his white luxury car.

"Hmm?" Zhang Wei reacted while walking along with him.

"Can I ask you something?" Ming Rusheng asked.

"Of course, Ming Rusheng! But, I am not sure if I can answer it." Zhang Wei was a smart person and also, he knew Ming Rusheng too well since he was a kid so he guessed already what Ming Rusheng was thinking and what he was about to ask.

"What happened in the past?" Ming Rusheng stopped in his tracks and asked to look at his uncle.

Zhang Wei stopped too and turned to look at Ming Rusheng. "Hmm! I know you are very curious about it since you understood about the hatred between the two families but there is a reason why we didn't tell you, so don't ask it," he said it and turned to step towards his car.

"I am not a kid anymore, uncle and as a member of this family I have the right to know everything." Ming Rusheng said in a bit high pitch to see his uncle leaving without answering his question.

Zhang Wei didn't turn back to look at him and said calmly, "You are right at your place, Ming Rusheng but you will get to know it once the right time will come" and he stepped towards his car where the driver already opened the door for him.

"I hope that the right time will come soon, uncle." Ming Rusheng said again.

"I hope so too," saying it Zhang Wei sat in his car and left the mansion. Ming Rusheng was standing while looking at the car

until it disappeared from his sight. While staring at the car he murmured, “What you and mother hiding from everyone, I will get to know about it soon, uncle.” as he said it something flashed in front of his eyes.

It was the day after Elder Lu’s wedding anniversary when Zhang Wei came to Ming Mansion early morning and went to his sister’s room. Ming Rusheng saw his uncle’s car parked in front of the mansion’s door when he came back home after jogging. The servant told him that his uncle went to meet his mother so without waiting for a moment, he stepped towards his mother’s room.

Just as Ming Rusheng was about to knock on the door, he heard his mother and uncle arguing about something. He retreated his hand and stood outside the door while listening to their conversation. From their conversation, he got to know about something that happened in the past. He knew his aunt died and Lu family especially Lu Jinhai was the reason but from what his mother said, he realized, his uncle and mother were involved too.

Once their conversation finished, Ming Rusheng hid as not wanting to show them that he heard everything. He saw his uncle was angry and left in a hurry. Once his uncle left, he went back to the door of his mother’s room and saw she was sitting in a chair while leaning back to it with her eyes closed and tears were rolling down from them. Just as he was about to turn, she said, “I made a mistake. It’s too late now.”

This made him feel even more confused. If it was all Lu family’s fault then why his mother was taking his uncle and herself responsible for it. He didn’t go to his mother and went to his room with so many questions in his mind.

Once his uncle’s car left, Ming Rusheng went to his own car and waited for his sister Ming Lan to drop her to the university. As he was waiting, suddenly the thought of going to university reminded him of Jiang Yuyan. He took out his cellphone and opened the gallery. In it, he had Jiang Yuyan’s picture which he clicked outside of the university from his car without letting her realize it.

In that picture, Ming Lan was talking to Jiang Yuyan and there was a smile on her face which was making her look too pretty. Her golden brown hair tied in a ponytail with few strands of hair floating in the air on either side of her face.

Ming Rusheng zoom out the picture so that only her face could be on the screen of his mobile. Smiled flashed on his face to see her. Suddenly there was a knock on the car's door which pulled out him from the daze.

That was Ming Lan. She opened the door and sat inside a car while looking at her brother's face as she thought, she just saw him smiling. Ming Rusheng noticed her curious sight on his face so he controlled himself from smiling without any reason. He started the car and moved in the direction of a university in the hope of being able to see the woman he was falling for.

Same morning In Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan's home..

Jiang Yuyan slept till late as she was already tired because of the make out session between her and Lu Qiang. When she woke up, the bedroom had already brightened up with sunlight. She rubbed her eyes to see clearly, just then she heard the voice. "Good morning, my love."

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Qiang who was ready in his office attire, sitting on a couch working on the laptop. He kept the laptop aside and stepped towards her. Sitting on the edge of the bed he pecked on her lips and tucked the hair behind her ear.

Jiang Yuyan smiled to see him and wished him good morning too. "How are you feeling now? Are you still tired?" Lu Qiang asked while looking at her beautiful smiling face'

Jiang Yuyan blushed to hear it and said, "I am fine." saying it, she averted her sight from his face.

231 Don't Be A Dog...

Jiang Yuyan smiled to see Lu Qiang who was sitting beside her on the edge of the bed and wished him good morning. “How are you feeling now? Are you still tired?” Lu Qiang asked while looking at her beautiful smiling face.

Jiang Yuyan blushed to hear it. “I am fine,” as saying it, she averted her sight from his face.

Lu Qiang held her chin, made her look at him and said, “I underestimated you then. I should have gone for more.”

“Cough-Cough!” His words reminded her what they did last night and she was utterly embarrassed to remember it. She never thought that she could ever be like this, in love with a man and doing all those intimate stuff with him. Moreover, she really wanted it from her heart and that’s what she found surprising about herself.

“What’s the time?” she asked as she came out of her thoughts, trying to distract him from the conversation.

Lu Qiang smiled to see her blushing and feeling embarrassed but he didn’t tease her more and replied, “It’s late a bit but you can still make it to the university in time.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at the square shaped, tiny, white table clock to check the time. Seeing a time, she got out of bed in a hurry to go towards the bathroom.

As she was about to enter the bathroom, Lu Qiang asked her with a mischievous smile on his face, “Do you want me to help you?”

“If you will help me then I won’t be able to go to the university at least for today,” she said and entered inside.

Once she came out of the bathroom and got ready, Lu Qiang called her. “Come here. I want to show you something.” He said and passed her his tablet once she sat beside him. She was shocked to see the multiple pictures of her with Lu Qiang from last night’s wedding ceremony.

News about Lu Qiang and her was spreading everywhere and it was viral online. Every news channel was broadcasting the same news. “Today, in university you might have to face some trouble, so I will suggest you stay home for a day.”

“But I have important classes and if I don’t go today, will it all be solved till tomorrow?” she asked as not wanting to miss her classes.

“Hmm! You are right. I just asked in case if you want to stay away from it,” he said.

“I want to but I don’t want this to affect our normal life so I will continue what I do,” She replied.

Lu Qiang dialed one number and instructed, “We are leaving in some time. Be prepared.”

“What was that?” She asked.

“Few arrangements before we go there,” he replied and took her downstairs for breakfast.

After breakfast, Lu Qiang took her to the university. When they reached there, Ming siblings were already present at the gate talking to each other.

Ming Lan felt sad to see Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan together but she was somewhere happy for Jiang Yuyan too as she knew there was no chance for her. If it was not Jiang Yuyan then there would be another girl but herself so in her opinion, Jiang Yuyan was a good choice for Lu Qiang. Moreover, she felt it was just her crush and her feelings for him were not that deep but still somewhere deep down in her heart she was sad.

Jiang Yuyan went to Ming Lan and Ming Rusheng was there too. For Jiang Yuyan he was just her maternal cousin but she was unaware of his feelings for her. Lu Qiang too walked with her to Ming siblings.

Lu Qiang looked around but there was nothing that he was worried about. His sight followed few men in suits, standing at a distance from the university gate. He recognized them as those were the bodyguards, he arranged to protect Jiang Yuyan as she was in the news now and she might be surrounded by journalists and other people.

Ming Rusheng greeted her with a smile and gave a fake smile to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang didn't react and had a cold expression on his face. It was a time for the girls to go inside just then Ming Rusheng called his sister. "Ming Lan!"

Ming Lan halted and asked to look at him, "Yes, brother!"

"Take care of Jiang Yuyan, few people might trouble her today."

"I will brother," Ming Lan said and both girls went inside. Lu Qiang didn't say anything as giving Ming Rusheng a pass as Jiang Yuyan's maternal cousin.

Once both girls went inside the gate, Ming Rusheng and Lu Qiang had left alone. When Jiang Yuyan disappeared from his sight, Lu Qiang was moved towards his car avoiding Ming Rusheng but Ming Rusheng called him, "Lu Qiang!"

Lu Qiang turned to look at him but didn't say a word. His gaze was enough to convey his words.

"Man! Don't look at me like this. I just want to ask you something," said Ming Rusheng being a bit annoyed with Lu Qiang's cold gaze which showed he was not interested in talking to him.

Lu Qiang sighed and asked, "What?"

"Do you know what exactly happened in the past and what your family did to my family that my father and grandfather hate you people, this much?"

"I don't know." Without giving a thought for a single moment on Ming Rusheng's question, Lu Qiang replied as he had only one answer to all the questions.

Upon getting an obvious reply from Lu Qiang, Ming Rusheng smiled with one corner of his lips up and said again, "It can not be possible that the king of Lus doesn't know anything related to his family."

"Why are you being a dog in your family then? Be a king and get to know everything." Lu Qiang spoke immediately as he felt annoyed, not having a will to answer his question which could hurt so many people.

232 Going To Try My Best..

“Why are you being a dog in your family then? Be a king and get to know everything.” Lu Qiang spoke immediately as he felt annoyed, not having a will to answer his question which could hurt so many people.

Ming Rusheng sighed to hear Lu Qiang’s words and said, “I so wish but people in my family are tight-lipped.”

“What happened in the past is in between elders. It would be better for us younger generation to not meddle in it and live our lives peacefully.”

Hearing it Ming Rusheng asked sarcastically, “Why? Hmm... Are you afraid that I might bring out the dark side of your family about what they did to mine.”

“I am afraid, you might bring out the dark side of your own family.” Lu Qiang replied which startled Ming Rusheng.

“It’s my aunt who died. Moreover, why her own family would hurt her,” he asked with even more questions in his mind. The more he wanted to know, the more it was becoming like a puzzle. Everyone was giving him answers which were taking him nowhere but making him feel puzzled and curious.

“Know it all by yourself, Ming Rusheng. I don’t have time to answer your useless questions and I don’t even care if you would get to know it or not.” Lu Qiang was about to turn towards his car but stopped and said to look at him, “One more thing. Stay away from my family.”

“I have no interest in your family, Lu Qiang. There are other things to be interested in,” Ming Rusheng replied.

“In those other things, don’t you dare to add anyone, dear to me.” Lu Qiang said and sat in the car.

Before Ming Rusheng could say anything further, the driver drove the car away which he had already started before Lu Qiang sat in the car. Driver Xu Bai was aware of the rivalry between these two people and he didn’t want his boss to waste

his time with Ming Rusheng. As Lu Qiang sat in the car, he drove away immediately.

Looking at Lu Qiang's car, Ming Rusheng spoke, "I can't guarantee you anything Lu Qiang because that other thing is unavoidable for me and unfortunately, this time we caught the interest in the same thing."

Ming Rusheng looked inside the university gate and said, "I hope I had realized it earlier how much I like you and I hope it's not too late now because I am going to try my best at this time."

He passed his sight across the men standing at a distance from the university gate in a suit. He already had guessed, those were the guards appointed by Lu Qiang to protect Jiang Yuyan. He dialed a number on his cellphone. Once the person on the other side of the line received the call, he said, "I saw your men standing outside of the university."

"Yes, Mr. Ming. We have been ordered to....."

"They should do their job better or I will make all of you suffer in hell." Ming Rusheng said before the man could complete his words and cut the call. He sat in his car and drove away.

When Jiang Yuyan went inside, most of the students recognized her and they were staring at her like they never saw a person. Soon they started talking about her being in the news.

"Isn't she the girl in a picture with the president of Lu corporation?"

"Yeah! I was thinking, I saw her somewhere but now I know."

"She is new in the city."

"She is pretty. No wonder he is interested in her."

"Hmm! But how she approached him, I want to know too. We can use it in the future when he is tired of her."

"Haha! Right. Let's ask her."

“One girl among the bystanders who were gossiping among themselves stepped in the direction of Jiang Yuyan but suddenly she was stopped by the man in a black suit.

“Miss, no one is allowed to bother Ms. Jiang Yuyan.” He was a bodyguard appointed to protect Jiang Yuyan inside the university from annoying and nosy people. Stopping the girl as warning other people too, bodyguard followed Jiang Yuyan to her class.

Jiang Yuyan was new in the city so not many people knew about her and that was the advantage. Still, people around her were able to recognize her as she was pretty looking girl and anyone could keep her face in mind.

Ming Lan and Jiang Yuyan both were aware of what was going on there but they avoided it and continued to walk.

“Don’t pay attention to these people. Some might say good things but most of them would be bitter with their words,” said Ming Lan.

“Hmm! I won’t. These people are nobody to me so doesn’t matter.” Jiang Yuyan replied as not affected by the gazes she was getting from the people around her.

“Good to know it.” Ming Lan said and both went to their classes. When Jiang Yuyan entered in her class, the bodyguard stood outside. All the students in the class were looking at her while talking to each other.

Jiang Yuyan continued walking inside without minding to these people and sat in her seat beside Nixxxie. “You are the talk of the town my dear, congrats for being a celebrity in a night.”

“Nixx! At least you don’t be like others.” Jiang Yuyan said and opened the book for the next class.

“Haha! Okay! I was just pulling your leg.”

Soon the news spread everywhere as few students clicked Jiang Yuyan and posted a picture online which alerted everyone that she studied in that university. Reporters gathered around the university to ask her questions and know about her everything.

Through their sources, they got to know about her name and other things but they were curious to know the things through her and to make it big news. Reporters were not allowed to enter the university so all were waiting for her to come outside.

233 Who Is Lu Feng's Girl...

During Lunchtime..In the cafeteria of the university..

Everyone was staring at Jiang Yuyan who came for lunch with Nixxxie. Both got the food and sat in the table and chair in one corner of that huge dining area. The bodyguard was still with Jiang Yuyan making sure no one would disturb her or come around her.

“So, Lu Qiang was the man who gave you sleepless nights and once you starved your poor tummy because of him,” Nixxxie asked with a teasing smile on her face while eating.

“Hmm.” Jiang Yuyan nodded

“Well! Not bad. I have heard lots of good things about him from my father as he is a businessman too and my father never praise anyone just like that.”

“Good to hear it.” Jiang Yuyan replied.

“I have seen him in a few parties and I found him impressive too. Men in Lu Families are mysterious and attracts lots of attention from girls.”

“Yeah, he is like that to others, mysterious,” Jiang Yuyan said and started to eat but suddenly Nixxxie said something which made Jiang Yuyan look at her. Nixxxie sounded like she was talking about someone whom she knew well.

“Not only him, one more person from that family is even more mysterious and attracts more attention,” Nixxxie said while eating with her head lowered down, without looking at Jiang Yuyan and looked like she was thinking about something.

“Are you talking about Lu Feng?” Jiang Yuyan asked directly as sensing something unusual about her.

“Hmm!”, nixxxie nodded while still eating with her head lowered down.

“Do you know him?” Jiang Yuyan asked surprisingly as Nixxxie never talked about him before.

“Yes! “He was my first crush when I was in high school. I never dared to talk to him but he never failed to attract me. He is my brother’s friend so often saw him at my home and you know as a teenage girl you are immature and fall for the guy easily,” Nixxxie said everything in one go and casually but she looked serious.

“Why didn’t you try to talk to him. He is a nice person.” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“Once I decided to talk to him and confess my feelings but I don’t know what happened to him suddenly and he went away from everyone. So, I never had a chance to talk to him,” Nixxxie replied.

“Hmm! You are right. No one knows why he changed, but he is somewhat back to his old self so you can talk to him now,” said Jiang Yuyan.

“Haha! No need. I am out of it now as I am not that same teenage girl and also, I think, he has someone else in his heart.” Nixxxie replied which startled Jiang Yuyan and thought ‘how come she doesn’t know about it and asked immediately, “Really? Who?”

“Well, I don’t know but I am sure of it and whoever that girl is, she must be someone special to be able to make his cold heart waver.”

“You are right. Lu Feng is a very different person and the girl he likes must be very special. After all. It’s not easy to capture his sight just like that.” Jiang Yuyan said without even realizing, she was talking about herself.

All gazes around were following these two but these two were immersed in their own talk without minding to them. Few people around clicked the pics without even noticed by them and again posted on social networking sights.

Outside of the Lu Corporation too, reporters were ready to capture a glimpse of Lu Qiang and wanted to ask him the questions related to Jiang Yuyan but they were not able to meet him. He just passed them a message through his assistant

that they will soon get answers to everything but they have to wait for some time.

Lu Qiang didn't want to hide anything from the world or he would have never come to that wedding ceremony with Jiang Yuyan holding her hand but he didn't want media to bother them like this. Reporters understood it and left. Lu Qiang came out of the Lu Corporation and went to receive Jiang Yuyan to the university.

Once classes finished, all the students started to come out of the university gate. Security of the university was active to stop from any chaos to happen outside as so many people gathered to see what was happening with so many reporters there. Also, it was something related to the safety of the person belongs to Lu Family so it was very important to take care of everything properly.

Everyone was ready with their cameras to capture her glimpse but suddenly they noticed a black Maybach arrived at the university and entered straight inside through the gate. Looking at the car and a number plate on it, reporters understood who that was. Now all were even more excited.

Entering inside the university, Lu Qiang went to Jiang Yuyan who was waiting for him as he already informed her to not come out on her own. Ming Lan, Nixxie and bodyguard were with her. The principal came to greet Lu Qiang personally and assured him, Jiang Yuyan would be safe inside the university.

Soon Ming Rusheng's car arrived. He got out of the car and straight went to them and said, "Seems like your foolish act is going to trouble her now."

"You don't have to concern yourself with this. It's my personal matter and my responsibility." Lu Qiang said and gave him a cold gaze.

"I am not concern about anything related to you. I am concern about Jiang Yuyan as she is related to me. Don't forget she is my cousin." said Ming Rusheng and looked at Jiang Yuyan to which she didn't know how to react and looked at Lu Qiang.

Looks like you have one annoying admirer here.” Nixxxie whispered in Jiang Yuyan’s ears to which Jiang Yuyan replied in the same way, “No! He is really my maternal cousin.”

“Ohh! But annoying one.” Nixxxie said to which Jiang Yuyan just smiled and nodded.

Lu Qiang pulled Jiang Yuyan towards him by light tug to her hand. He placed his arm on her shoulder as wrapping her in it and said, “But, your cousin is related to me for a lifetime so you should stop worrying about her. Soon the whole world will get to know about it.”

234 Words, But Not The Hollow Ones...

“Your cousin is now related to me for a lifetime so you should stop worrying about her. She belongs to me and she is my responsibility. Soon the whole world will get to know about it.” Saying it, Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked, “Am I right?” to which Jiang Yuyan nodded a little with a smile which she was trying to hide.

Nixxie and principal smiled to see this show of affection by Lu Qiang while Ming Lan was standing silently. She was heartbroken and needed time to get over it.

To this reply from Lu Qiang, Ming Rusheng couldn't find any words to say as he knew what Lu Qiang said was the truth because till now he understood, Jiang Yuyan loved him too and the day when she will become Lu Qiang's wife won't be too far. Moreover, that was Lu Qiang who was among the most powerful person and it was not easy to deal with him.

The thought of, Jiang Yuyan belonging to Lu Qiang was killing him inside but at that moment but there was nothing he could do but grit his teeth and clench his fist.

Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to sit in the car and both left the university. Reporters didn't get any chance to ask anything to Lu Qiang and they just had to be satisfied with the pictures of the Car. Lu Qiang wanted to announce it in a proper way and not anywhere in the crowd of reporters so he didn't stop to answer them.

Soon both reached Lu Mansion where reporters were waiting for them too but security guards control them.

Everyone in the family was aware of what was happening outside and why. All were waiting for Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan to come home as they were excited to see the news.

Once both reached inside the mansion, elder Lu stood up from his seat and went to Lu Qiang. “That’s like my grandson. Always show your love in a way to turn the whole world upside down,” he said and hugged Lu Qiang.

Though Lu Qiang didn’t say clearly anything to his family, all were already aware of it and waiting for this day to come when they could clearly express their happiness to Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and hugged his grandpa back just then elder Lu whispered in Lu Qiang’s ear, “I can see my great-grandchildren playing in this mansion with me.”

“Soon grandpa.” Lu Qiang replied and this time he was not annoyed with his grandpa’s great-grandchildren talk.

Elder Lu turned towards Jiang Yuyan and said, “Finally my dream to make you my granddaughter-in-law is going to be true.” Jiang Yuyan blushed to hear it and smiled. Elder Zhao Shuang too blessed her with loving words and a smile.

All had smiles on their faces as being happy but Su Hui. She didn’t say anything and kept quiet. Lu Jinhai came to Jiang Yuyan and said while patting on her head, “My friend would be happy to know this as much as I am. I will talk to him soon and bring you to this house permanently.”

Ning Jiahui was so happy that she hugged Jiang Yuyan and said, “I am glad that Lu Qiang chose you. I would be very happy to see you as my daughter-in-law.”

Lu Bao and Lu Lian came to both of them with an ear to ear smile on their faces and said, “We already knew it, brother Lu Qiang. We are happy for both of you.” Lu Qiang smiled to his excited sisters and patted them on the head.

Seeing everyone congratulating them, Su Hui too got up from the sofa and went to Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan.

“Congratulations to both of you.” to which Lu Qiang didn’t react while Jiang Yuyan replied back with a smile.

Everyone said something but Lu Lijun was standing silently, not being hyper like others. Lu Qiang held Jiang Yuyan’s hand and both went Lu Lijun who was standing near the sofa while looking at them. “Won’t you say anything, Lu Lijun?”

“Elder brother, do you think without my silent approval it was possible for her to be with you peacefully.” Lu Lijun said in a serious tone and cold expression on his face but there was a hidden approval in his sarcastic words and happiness in his eyes for his elder brother.

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it. He knew Lu Lijun was already aware of the relationship between him and Jiang Yuyan as he was a smart kid and he already approved Jiang Yuyan in their lives. He couldn't help but thank him, “Thank you for accepting her, Lu Lijun.”

“I am happy for you, elder brother.” Lu Lijun replied then looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, “Just like the elder brother, now you are a part of my life too as everything that belongs to the elder brother, belongs to me, too.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded with a smile as saying ‘Yes’ to what Lu Lijun said. Lu Lijun's acceptance of Jiang Yuyan was the biggest thing in the family and all were relaxed to see this.

Those words from Lu Lijun were not hollow. He always meant what he said but in the near future how these words will take turns in certain conditions, no one ever thought about it. Jiang Yuyan was smiling being unaware of what her approval could mean in the future when she will face the unfortunate turn in her life.

=====

*** (For all the readers, a glimpse of the present between adult Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan as I got so many requests regarding this.) ***

Lying in a bed, Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes just to see, Lu Lijun was sitting in a chair calmly while looking at her.

“finally you are awake.”

“Get out of my room.”

“Mother asked me to take care of you as she is busy.”

“When did you learn to obey others and do you even know how to care for someone?”

“No. I don’t, but for the first time I want to take care of someone and that someone is my wife.”

235 Liking The Weird Thing...

In Lu Feng's private apartment—

“Both are looking great together. Isn't it?” Jiang Yang asked while going through the pictures of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan from the last night's wedding, in his tablet.

“Hmm! True.” Lu Feng replied while going through a few documents.

Seeing Lu Feng not reacting to his words, Jiang Yang kept his tab aside and said annoyingly, “You are no fun, Lu Feng. I am here to console you by hurting you first after showing these pictures but you are being stubborn and you are not even paying attention to me.”

“Stop doing useless things, Jiang Yang. I am fine and these things are not going to affect me,” Lu Feng replied, still being busy.

“Tell me honestly. Were you not affected to see both of them together?” Jiang asked curiously.

Lu Feng put the documents in his hands down and said to look at Jiang Yang, “Of course I was, Jiang Yang. I am a human who has a heart, but along with the heart this human has a brain too, which helps to differentiate between what is right and what is wrong.” He said everything in a serious way.

“Sigh! Now I can't even tease you by rubbing salt on your wounds. You are getting immune to my teasing, Lu Feng.”

Seeing no reaction from Lu Feng again, Jiang Yang stood up from his seat, sat beside Lu Feng and said, “I thought I would console my darling and give my shoulder to let him cry but you didn't give me an opportunity. Here, my shoulder. Use it.” Jiang Yang said with a teasing smile and expression on his face.

Lu Feng pinched the space between his eyebrows and said, "You started again? Now I have started to doubt you. Do you really like men or what?" Lu Feng said even though he didn't mean it.

"Haha! What do you think?" Jiang Yang asked playfully without minding to Lu Feng's words.

"That, you are an a**hole." Lu Feng replied annoyingly.

Jiang Yang laughed to see Lu Feng's annoyed reaction and said, "That I am." He thought about something and said, "Okay, let me tell you a thing that might break your heart, my darling."

"What?" Lu Feng asked.

"Well! There is a girl and I found her interesting." He then put a hand on his heart and said, "After so long, someone was able to disturb the steady beating of my heart."

"Aww! You really broke my heart," Lu Feng replied sarcastically.

"I know it darling but I can't help it as I am straight and my heart wants to beat for her," he said while remembering about Nixxxie.

"Who is the girl?" Lu Feng asked.

"She is studying with Jiang Yuyan and her name is Nixx... umm.. something like that. A weird name as the girl is weird too but suddenly I started to like weird things." Jiang Yang replied trying to remember her name as he just heard Jiang Yuyan calling her just Nixx.

"Nixxxie?" Lu Feng asked with a serious expression on his face.

Hearing her name finally, Jiang Yang exclaimed, "Yeah! That is right. Nixxxie."

"Stay away from her." Lu Feng said immediately when he heard Jiang Yang.

"Why?" Jiang Yang asked as not understanding the seriousness in Lu Feng's reaction.

“Her family and those people are not easy to deal with.” Lu Feng replied to look in his eyes.

“Are they monsters or what?” Jiang Yang asked casually but being curious.

“Might be more dangerous” Lu Feng replied.

“Ohh! Then I should definitely see her. Let me see how weird they are?” Jiang Yang was still being playful which annoyed Lu Feng and he couldn't help but bit harsh on him. “Don't you dare, Jiang Yang. Stay away from her.”

“Okay! But I can't guarantee my heart.” Jiang Yang replied to put his hand on his heart again.

Lu Feng was a little angry to hear him. “I will kill you if you dare to go near her.”

“If I have to die in either way then let me go to her. Never felt like this before, my friend.” Jiang Yang was still taking his words for granted.

“You are willing to die soon. I can see that.”

“Not so soon. Let me have at least a few kids with her.”

“You are not going to listen, huh?” Lu Feng was about to give up in front of him.

“Are you jealous that you are getting a love rival. Don't worry. You would be my first love always.” Jiang replied being playful again, ignoring how serious Lu Feng was.

“Stop talking bulls**t when you know I am serious.” This time Lu Feng lost his temper because he was worried about Jiang Yang and he was not ready to understand what Lu Feng was trying to say.

“Okay-Okay. I am sorry.” Jiang Yang couldn't argue much in front of angry Lu Feng.

“Before doing anything, you have to inform me first. Got it?” Knowing Jiang Yang well, Lu Feng was aware, he won't listen so he decided to give up from diverting him and instead thought to help him whenever it would be necessary.

“Okay! I will do that.” Jiang Yang replied as obeying to him.

Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan got this news in the US. They were surprised to see this news as they never expected their daughter to be with any man so soon. They wanted to make sure of this news so They thought to call Jiang Yang but they couldn't reach him. The anxiousness was killing the parents so finally, they decided to call Lu Jinhai.

Jiang Peizhi called his friend and the moment call was received, a happy voice came out from the other side of the line.

“Hello, My friend. I was thinking about to call you but I was waiting for appropriate timing as our time zones are different.”

“You can call me any time even if it's in the middle of the night and you know it, Lu Jinhai,” Jiang Peizhi replied.

236 Worry Of A Father...

“Hello, My dear friend. I was thinking about to call you but I was waiting for appropriate timing as our time zones are different,” Lu Jinhai said without giving a chance to Jiang Peizhi to talk as he was happy with his son’s decision.

“You can call me any time even if it’s in the middle of the night and you know it, Lu Jinhai,” Jiang Peizhi replied.

“Haha! I know and also, I know why you called me. So, you got the news even before I could inform you by myself.” Lu Jinhai asked being obvious to why his friend might have called him at this hour and so suddenly.

“Hmm! We just saw it. Is it the truth?” Jiang Peizhi asked.

Lu Jinhai was not able to gather his happiness and said, “Yes! It’s the truth and we all are so happy.”

Though Lu Jinhai was happy, it was not the same case for Jiang Peizhi. Other than being happy, he had few other things in mind concerning his daughter, Jiang Yuyan. “I don’t know what to say as it was so sudden and I never expected Jiang Yuyan to like someone and you know why.”

“Yes, I know but don’t worry about it. She is all fine and happy with my son.” Lu Jinhai replied as he was aware of what Jiang Peizhi was worried about.

“Good to know it but I can’t say anything until I come to China. First, I need to talk to both of my kids and then with Lu Qiang.” Jiang Peizhi said with a serious tone and worry on his face.

“I can understand, Jiang Peizhi. After all, she is your daughter and as a father, it’s normal for you to worry about her and to think in this way.” Lu Jinhai said, trying to console his friend.

“It’s not just because I am her father. I am worried because of her past condition.” Jiang Peizhi replied with heaviness in his heart to think about her past and his face looked sad.

Mo Ruolan was sitting beside him, listening to their conversation. When she heard what was being said and saw her husband's sad face, she put her hand on his shoulder to calm him down while having a sad expression on her face too.

“Again same thing, Jiang Peizhi. She is fine, trust me. I saw her closely all this time since she is at my home. Moreover, what happened in the past should not matter in a present now. She is one innocent child who did nothing wrong and she has a right to be happy in her life.” said Lu Jinhai.

“I know and I am just concern about her happiness as other things don't matter to me at all, but...”

“No Ifs and buts. What happened in the past, doesn't matter to my family and my son too, so rest assured. We all are happy to have her. Both of you should do the same now.” Lu Jinhai said to assure him before he could say anything further and feel worried.

“Hmm!” with this, Jiang Peizhi was silent so Lu Jinhai asked, “When are you coming here.”

“As soon as possible,” Jiang Peizhi replied.

“We will be waiting for the in-laws of my son, see you soon then.” Lu Jinhai said bye to his friend and cut the call

Once they cut the call, Mo Ruolan asked, “What did Lu Jinhai say? Is it the truth?”

“Yes! It is.” Jiang Peizhi replied still having a worried expression on his face.

“Why are you worried then, Lu Qiang is the best person our daughter could ever get.” Mo Ruolan had good judgment about people around her and her instincts about Lu Qiang were good.

Since Lu Qiang was a kid, she had a good image of him in her mind and having him as her son-in-law was a fortunate thing for her which she never thought to happen.

“I am worried, if he knows her past and what kind of problems she has, her nightmares, her fear to get close to the men and a few other things then what will happen?” Jiang Peizhi replied.

“As much I could understand Lu Qiang, he is a patient person. He will understand her.” She replied being confident about Lu Qiang.

What Mo Ruolan was saying, Jiang Peizhi understood it but the worry because the past was overcoming his rationality. “He is a man after all and every man wishes for a happy married life and I don’t want to trouble my friend’s son and his family because of our problems. What if, he won’t be able to understand her?”

Mo Ruolan listen to him and said calmly, “Now you are thinking too much, honey. Think in this way, when two people are in love, do you think they don’t know about each other’s inhibitions and their own problems?”, she asked while trying to calm him down by caressing his shoulder with a hand.

“I hope you are right because I don’t want her to suffer from anything in the future. You know it well, how we took her out of everything. If it happens again, then it’s us being irresponsible towards her, just like in the past.” Whatever Mo Ruolan said it was not helping to stop him worrying about his daughter.

Mo Ruolan held his hand in her and said while caressing it, “Don’t worry, honey. Don’t forget Jiang Yang is with her. Do you think, the sister he has raised as his own daughter, he will let her get into anyone’s hand.” Mo Ruolan asked.

Her words made Jiang Peizhi come out of his thoughts and he said, “Hmm! You are right. I trust Jiang Yang when it comes to his sister but still, we should go back to China as soon as possible as I need to talk to those three first.”

“Sure! I was thinking the same. I will check our schedules and make sure to book the flight tickets to China.

=====

Hey guys, Webnovel has introduced a Privileged feature for readers who want to read the chapters as advance which also helps in supporting the author.

How it works: At the end of the chapter or in the chapter index you will be able to find an orange block ‘More Privilege

chapters'. Currently, I will be starting with only 6 chapters.

Please remember that you using the privilege only gives you accessibility to the advanced chapters. To read the chapters, you will have to unlock the chapter one by one. Another note being, the offer is set only until the last day of the month. To understand more, tap on the question mark symbol at the right.

The chapters will be released normally. It is NOT necessary to buy them as compulsion as for the free readers you will be able to get chapters as normal that is one chapter a day (with only the privileged reader who will be a couple of chapters ahead of the story).

237 My Scared Kitten, Yuyan..

After dinner, Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were walking in a garden. As everyone knew about them now, they didn't bother to mind others and decided to spend time together irrespective of what others might think.

While walking, Jiang Yuyan was immersed in her own thoughts even though, Lu Qiang was beside her. Seeing her like this, Lu Qiang asked, "Is something bothering you?"

"My parents might have got this news till now and It's not appropriate if they get to know about it through the other sources instead of me or my brother. All this happened so suddenly that I couldn't think about to inform them first." She replied.

"Hmm you are right but it's fine. Till now my father must have talked to your father so don't worry about it. They are elders and can understand things." Lu Qiang replied

"Hmm! I hope so," she replied, still having a long face.

Seeing her, Lu Qiang held her hand and spoke again while walking along with her, "It's our life so other than the two of us I don't give importance to anyone. The only person who was important to me next to you was Lu Lijun and he already accepted you. Also, it doesn't matter to me what others think even if they are our parents."

Stopping suddenly in his tracks, he turned to look at Jiang Yuyan. Looking into her eyes while holding her hands in his and caressing the back of her palm with his thumbs, he said, "I just know one thing, as we are together finally, I want to cherish each and every moment together till the end of my life, without thinking about others."

Jiang Yuyan didn't say anything as she could see how much he loved her and she felt fortunate to have such a man in her life

even though it was impossible for her to believe someone could love her this much like a crazy.

“Soon I am going to release a statement informing everyone about us but I will do that once your parents come to China. I think I can be this much considerate towards them.”

“Thank you so much, Lu Qiang,” She said being emotional as he was being considerate to her parents. The Lu Qiang she knew was only considerate towards her and his younger brother but when it came to others, he never spared a thought for them,

“You don’t need to thank me. I can do anything as long as it can make you happy.” Lu Qiang said it and pecked her on lips.”

It startled Jiang Yuyan and she said, “We are not in our room. Someone might see us.”

“I don’t care if the whole world sees me like this making love with my wife,” he said and give her one more peck.

Covering her lips with her palm to stop him from showing his affection in open she said, “Wife? We are yet to get married.”

“I told you before, a wedding is just a formality for me. If you want, we can consummate our marriage tonight and then you can get a feeling of being my wife,” he said with a mischievous smile on his face.

The meaning of his bold words made her feel nervous.

“Cough-Cough! I..I will wait,”

“You got scared with only the thought of it. What will happen when the moment will come and we will be doing it for real?” He leaned closer to her and whispered in her ear, “I won’t be considerate all the time.”

Jiang Yuyan blushed to hear it but as she was getting used to his teasing, she replied boldly, “When the time will come I won’t ask you to be considerate.”

“And when that time will come?” Lu Qiang asked being curious.

“After our wedding and getting blessings from our families,”
She replied.

Lu Qiang had no problem with waiting for her and said,
“Okay! As you wish. I will wait until our wedding night then,
though it doesn’t matter to me if we do it now or after the
wedding. For me, I just want you to be mentally and
physically prepared for it.”

“I am!” She replied while looking into his eyes.

“Really?” he asked with his one eyebrow raised upward.

Jiang Yuyan nodded as saying ‘Yes’. Lu Qiang smiled
mischievously and whispered in her ear, “So, in which room
you want to do it, mine or yours?” Jiang Yuyan gulped to hear
it. Just then Lu Qiang whispered again while touching her
earlobes with his lips, “Trust me I am dying to do it as it’s
really difficult to hold back.”

Touch of his lips passed shiver across her spine and she said
while collecting her thoughts, “I...mean, I... am ready but just
wait till our wedding.”

Lu Qiang laughed a little to see her scared and said, “My
Scared kitten, I was kidding. Let’s go inside now.”

On the way back to the mansion Jiang Yuyan spoke, “I am
very happy that Lu Lijun accepted our relationship.”

“Hmm! I knew he would as he is my brother. From now on, he
will take care of you as much he cares for me,” he replied.

Jiang Yuyan was happy to hear it and said, “It means, the little
iceberg is not as cold as he looks.”

Lu Qiang smiled to hear what she called Lu Lijun and said,
“Hmm! He is not that cold but to some people he is.”

“Well, I am just about myself. It would be good to be taken
care of him, the little iceberg.” She said being happy but Lu
Qiang’s reply made her happiness disappear. “It is but
sometimes it’s not good.”

“Why?”, She asked with lots of questions in her mind as she
was already curious to know about what exactly Lu Lijun was.

“He is very possessive towards the person he cares for. Other than me now it’s you.” He replied with concern on his face.

“What is bad in that,” She asked as thinking what is bad in a possessiveness of a kid.

238 Pain With A Pleasure...

“His possessiveness is extreme that he can make everything move upside down. When he said you belong to him now, he really means it.” Lu Qiang said casually but there was seriousness hidden behind his eyes.

“So? I think it’s fine,” She replied.

“Yeah! It is fine for you but not fine for the person who will try to hurt you or even if that person does it by mistake,” Lu Qiang replied.

Jiang looked at Lu Qiang with sight full of questions but before she could ask anything, she realized they reached inside the mansion so she didn’t ask anything.”

Lu Qiang knew she had so many questions related to Lu Lijun and said, “I will tell you everything soon don’t worry.” Both went back to the second floor to their rooms. As they reached in front of Jiang Yuyan’s room, they stopped.

Since their last fight in Jiang Yuyan’s bedroom, regarding what other family members might think to know that they are sleeping together, both didn’t sleep together in her room.

Lu Qiang looked at her and said, “As, not just our families but the whole world knows about us so I don’t think there should be any problem to sleep in one bedroom and in one bed, in this mansion.”

Jiang Yuyan understood, he was teasing her just because of her last fight with him, which she thought was to be useless now. She opened the door, held his hand and pulled him inside the room and asked while looking into his eyes with a smile on her face, “Is it fine now?”

Seeing in her starry bright eyes, he replied, “More than fine now, because I can’t think about staying away from you even for a single moment.” He said and kissed her.

After sharing light and romantic kiss they parted away. Lu Qiang held her hands and caresses her wrist and said, “I forgot

to check them properly as we were in haste in the morning.”

It reminded Jiang Yuyan what they did last night. She pulled her hands back and hide them behind her back in a fear of getting them tied again and said, “They are fine.”

“Don’t worry I am just checking if your wrists still have those red marks caused by being tied in a tie,” he said feeling worried about her but Jiang Yuyan was not ready to show him her wrists.

Lu Qiang gave out a deep sigh and said, “If they are fine then let’s do it again, let me get the tie.”

“No! I mean they are fine but still, it’s hurting a bit.” She said and put forward her hands to allow him to take a look of her wrists.

Lu Qiang noticed her wrist had light pink circular marks but looked almost invisible and asked, “Does it hurt more.”

“Nope! Just a bit but it’s fine,” She replied.

“In the future, you might feel the pain often, so be ready for it,” he said with teasing smile on his face while still looking at her wrists and caressing her them.

She looked at him and asked, “Are you going to hurt me?”

Lu Qiang moved his sight from her wrists to her face and said while looking into her eyes, “How can I hurt you, Yuyan? It would be something like what we did last night. A pain with pleasure. Didn’t you like it?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded a little with her head lowered down while hiding a smile on her face and said, “I did.”

Lu Qiang smiled to see her and whispered in her ear, “That is what I was talking about. How about next time you get these marks on your ankles?”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t reply to him as not knowing what to say.

Lu Qiang hugged her and said, “You are really like a cute scared kitten.” She smiled to hear it and hugged him back.

Soon both went to sleep as Lu Qiang decided to let her take a rest as she couldn’t sleep well the previous night.

The next few days were the same for Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan as reporters were still following them and Lu Qiang was waiting for Jiang Yuyan's parents to come to China before he could officially announce to everyone about their relationship.

Soon, Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan came to China. As they came, without waiting for much time both preferred to talk to their kids. Jiang Yang was in Jiang residence so they talked to him first.

In the morning, once they arrived and gathered for breakfast in the dining room after getting freshen up, Lu Jinhai couldn't hold back himself more and asked, "Jiang Yang, what is this news about Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan?"

Jiang Yang was expecting this question from his father. He knew, his father was way too possessive about her since the incidence from the past and he won't decide anything related to her without thinking about it thousands of times even though that thing might be best in the eyes of the world.

For him, having Lu Qiang for his daughter was not important even a bit over the worry about her. When any father would be happy to get this news, he was just thinking about his precious daughter.

Jiang Yang was calm and replied, "Lu Qiang and Yuyan both are in love with each other."

Mo Ruolan was happy to hear it. Moreover, she had already approved of Lu Qiang as her son-in-law in her heart but she preferred to not meddle in the talk between these two men. One man was Jiang Yuyan's biological father while the other one was the person who raised her as a father and mother, to what she was.

Jiang Peizhi sighed and said, "I see. But do you know the seriousness behind this?"

"There is nothing to be serious about it. They love each other so it's given they should be together," Jiang Yang replied firmly not being affected by his father's passive behavior.

*Note- There was one reader who was spamming the comment section as well as review section by copy pasting the comments from other novels in here and that too multiple times. Even after warning for several times, that person was being stubborn so I had to take an action and asked Webnovel to ban his account. The action has been taken and his account is banned. I am requesting all the readers please don't spam comment and review section. We all are here to read and enjoy. Annoying each other is not a good thing. When I get lovely comments from you guys I feel good and even respond to them always. The reader who ask me questions I like to answer them too. Keep doing it as I like to interact with you all. Just spamming is not allowed here..

239 Your Daughter Is In Love...

“There is nothing to be serious about it, father. They love each other so it’s given, they should be together,” Jiang Yang replied firmly not being affected by his father’s passive behavior.

Jiang Peizhi understood what Jiang Yang said but still, he was worried and said, “I am her father and if she finds someone who genuinely loves her and she loves him too then I would be more than happy but with her past condition we all know it’s not that easy for her.”

“I know what you are worried about, father. You are scared because of her past that, if she won’t be able to be happy with a person and suffer from the heartbreak she will go back to her old self.” Jiang Yang said.

Mo Ruolan was on her son’s side this time but she understood her husband’s worry as a father and said, “Honey. Your concern about her is fine but the condition in the past was different. Don’t relate it to this one.” She spoke to make her husband understand the difference between the situations.

“I know both situations are the same but don’t you remember what doctor Christian said. He clearly instructed us to keep her away from any kind of huge shock or mental stress or it might trigger her. If she went back to her old self again, I won’t be able to forgive myself ever.” Jiang Peizhi said not wanting to understand them. He looked emotional too and why not as he saw his precious daughter suffering the pain as in hell.

“I remember it father but don’t worry, nothing like this would ever happen.” Jiang Yang said to assure his father.

“How can you be so sure. It’s our responsibility to keep her away from anything that might affect her and support her to live a better and happy life.” Jiang Peizhi said being passive again,

Mo Ruolan was feeling upset with her husband's behavior as he was not ready to understand anything and said, "So what do you want to do, honey? Keep her with us for her entire life and make her live her life alone when the girls of her age are already married and have their own kids."

These words from Mo Ruolan were like an eye-opener for Jiang Peizhi and he said in a calm voice, "I just want her to live a happy life and I don't want her past to affect her in any way."

"And for that Lu Qiang is the only option we have, father." Jiang Yang said being sure about his decision of letting his sister go with Lu Qiang.

"Why are you so sure about him?" Jiang Peizhi asked and Mo Ruolan too wanted to know the reason behind Jiang Yang's trust in Lu Qiang.

Jiang Yang put the chopsticks in his hands down and said calmly while looking at his father, "Lu Qiang was waiting for her to return to China for all these years and he was in love with her even when he couldn't even see or talk to her. He missed her and spend this time just with the memories he had with her."

"He made one promise to her when we were kids that he will marry her one day and he didn't forget it even for a single moment till now. He tried his best to make that promise come true even if it was difficult for him to do so because of Yuyan's condition. There were many bad moments but he never thought to give up on her."

Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan were listening to each and every word from Jiang Yang carefully without disturbing him in between.

Jiang Yang continued, "When two people are in love and very close to each other, a man mostly does things the way he wants but Lu Qiang is still waiting for her to be ready to accept him and he will wait even if it takes more time. For him, just being with her is more important than other things. His love of her is not something that we can measure, it's endless." Jiang Yang said every possible thing he could, to

show his father why Lu Qiang was the right person for his sister.

“Yuyan’s condition? You mean he knows about her and her past.” Jiang Peizhi asked being surprised. Mo Ruolan wanted to ask the same question too.

“Yes father and he was the one to take her out of it and he is the reason for her being happy now. Also, Yuyan told him everything, herself,” Jiang Yang said and started to eat again as what he wanted to say was finished.

“Herself?” Jiang Peizhi exclaimed. This was a shocking thing for both Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan as all these years she never talked about this to anyone except for her last conversation with doctor Christian four years back. She preferred not to mention that incident ever to anyone as remembering it was like torture for her. She wanted to bury it as it never happened.

Jiang Peizhi was surprised as well as a bit happy too as to think his daughter was ready to live a normal life. He felt bad for whatever they tried all this time was not able to help her. “We tried everything to get her out of it but how.....”

“It’s called true love, father which can make anything possible and trust me it’s all only because of Lu Qiang’s love, care, patience and efforts towards her,” Jiang Yang’s words made his parents speechless as they had nothing to complain about.

Sensing the silence in the room Jiang Yang spoke again, “Moreover, she feels the same for him so both of you should be happy that your daughter is in love and that too badly. She is head over heels for him.” He said and started to dig in food with a smile on his face.

Listening to him, Mo Ruolan smiled too while Jiang Peizhi was happy but didn’t react to his words.

240 Nervous To Meet Parents...

Same day...

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan got ready to go to Jiang residence as Jiang Yang informed them the previous day that his parents were coming to china the next morning and wished to meet Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang both at lunch.

In a car, on the way to the Jiang residence..

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were sitting in a back passenger seat. Jiang Yuyan was calm, not reacting much to anything.

“You look nervous. They are your parents, not strangers.” Lu Qiang said and held her hand to calm her down.

“I know but still I am feeling nervous to think about how they will react,” she replied.

“As I am with you, you don’t need to feel nervous about anything. I will answer everything they ask.” Lu Qiang said and held her hands while entangling his fingers with hers.

Just before Lunchtime, Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan reached Jiang residence where Jiang Yang and Mo Ruolan welcomed them. Mo Ruolan hugged her daughter and asked, “How have you been dear? Seems like you didn’t miss me at all?” Mo Ruolan said with a teasing smile on her face after passing her sight across Lu Qiang. it was like, she had already approved to their relationship.

Jiang Yuyan understood what her mother meant and replied while hugging her mother back, “Of course Mom, I missed you and father, too.”

Lu Qiang was standing near the door with Jiang Yang while looking at these ladies. Seeing Jiang Yuyan happy to meet her mother, Lu Qiang said, “If I knew, you would be this happy to meet your mother, I would have done this even before to bring

your parents back to china. Lu Qiang was referring to his step of introducing Jiang Yuyan as his woman to the world.

All smiled to hear it. Mo Ruolan looked at him and asked with a pleasant smile on her face, “How have you been Lu Qiang?”

“I am all fine as Yuyan is with me.” Lu Qiang replied.

“You guys! Please, stop this show of affection. Early morning, I saw my parents and now both of you. Think about a single soul like me.” Jiang Yang said annoyingly.

Mo Ruolan hit on the back of his shoulder and said, “You are becoming more naughty as you are a grown-up man now, my son,”

“I am stating a fact Mom. Even though the father was full of worry about Yuyan, he didn’t forget to wish you a good morning in a romantic way,” Jiang Yang said and winked at his mother.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan looked at each other and smiled to understand what Jiang meant.

Hearing it, Mo Ruolan felt embarrassed and shy as Lu Qiang was there too. She hit Jiang Yang again but this time it was a bit harsh which made him whine in pain, “Auch! Mom it hurts.”

“You... deserve it. You need a beating now for a real. Dare to say this in front of your father then I’ll see.” Mo Ruolan said and suddenly a voice got their attention.

“So what? She is my wife and is there anything wrong in loving my woman?” That was Jiang Peizhi who came out of his study and happened to listen, what his son and wife said.

Everyone had smiles on their faces with this lively atmosphere. As Jiang Peizhi reached them, he looked at Lu Qiang and said, “Glad to see you here.” Lu Qiang greeted him back with a smile and a little nod.

Looking at his daughter, he asked, “Aren’t you happy to see your father, princess?”

Jiang Yuyan stepped towards her father and hugged him. “I missed you, Dad.” Jiang Peizhi hugged her and said while

patting her, “I missed you too.”

“So where were we?” Jiang Peizhi asked to look at his son who was rubbing his shoulder where his mother hit him.

“No dad, I didn’t say there is anything wrong in showing love to each other but you people should show some mercy to the single man here.” Jiang Yang replied.

“Why don’t you get someone for yourself then? Till when we should consider your being a single man condition and stop ourselves?” Mo Ruolan asked.

“Well! Brother, someone is there you are interested in. why don’t you move ahead with her.” Jiang Yuyan asked which made others curious to know about it.

“Who? How come we don’t know?” Mo Ruolan asked and Jiang Peizhi and Lu Qiang had the same question in their minds too.

“What are you talking about sis. There is nothing or I would have told everyone till now and our parents must be expecting a grandchild by this time. You know how fast I am,” Jiang Yang replied being playful again.

His bold words made them laugh. “You are shameless as usual Jiang Yang,” Said Mo Ruolan

“Everyone knows it already, mom and you know, I can’t help it.” Jiang Yang replied.

Jiang Yang was the source of happiness for everyone. He was always like this. His funny words always made a work of ice breaking whenever the situation was awkward between the people around him.

They all went to the living room with smiles on their faces and sat there on the sofa. They talked for a while about the things from here and there. Some about the business and some about what was happening around the world and current economic conditions.

The main thing for what they were meeting, nobody talked about it till lunch as no one knows from where to start. Lu

Qiang was waiting for Jiang Yuyan's parents to ask him what they want but they were being silent about it.

After a Lunch, Mo Ruolan asked Jiang Yuyan to come with her as she was meeting her daughter after months. Once the two ladies were gone, Three men left in the living room. Jiang Yang excused himself saying he will be back soon, leaving Lu Qiang and Jiang Peizhi alone.

241 Curious Mother...

Once Jiang Yang left to the living room, Lu Qiang was sitting with no expression on his face as his usual self while Jiang Peizhi was thinking, from where to start the conversation. It was not a big deal before but now the conditions had been changed so it was a bit awkward for both of them.

Lu Qiang was not the same kid who Jiang Peizhi used to talk to as his uncle. Moreover, now he was the man, his daughter was in love with. After roaming his sight around a living room for a while, Jiang Peizhi finally decided to talk and asked, “Jiang Yuyan looks happy with you.”

With these words from Jiang Peizhi, Lu Qiang looked at him and said, “As much as I am.”

Jiang Peizhi nodded in agreement and spoke again, “Jiang Yang told us, you helped her to get out of her past things. Thank you so much for that.”

“You don’t need to. I did it for myself as I can’t see her in any kind of pain,” Lu Qiang replied in his firm voice.

Jiang Peizhi was glad to hear it but he was still worried about the future and said, “I hope things would be the same always as I don’t want to see her heartbroken.”

Lu Qiang looked at him and said while looking straight into his eyes, “I can only assure that she would be with me till the end of my life.”

Jiang Peizhi was happy to see how confident Lu Qiang was and said, “Good to know it. So what are the next plans?” Jiang Peizhi didn’t prefer to talk more about the other personal things and went straight to the point to discuss further plans.

“Releasing a statement about us going to be engaged soon,” Lu Qiang replied.

Jiang Peizhi didn’t want his daughter to get married this soon as she was still too young in his eyes. She was just nineteen

and he thought it would be too early for her, so he said, “But about the wedding? She is still.....”

“It would be next year once she turns twenty.” Lu Qiang replied sensing the worry in Jiang Peizhi’s voice. He was too confident about what he was saying. Also, it showed he had already planned everything and he didn’t need anyone’s permission for it.

Jiang Peizhi was fine with the idea of Jiang Yuyan getting married after a year so he didn’t object to it. He was aware that, Lu Qiang was a son of Lu Jinhai so it was given that he would be like his father, determined to do what he wanted to. Also, if his daughter was going to be happy with it, he was fine with anything.

In Mo Ruolan’s bedroom...

As both ladies reached the room, Mo Ruolan made Jiang Yuyan sit on a couch while she sat beside her. She was being a typical mother who was worried to see her daughter was in love and wanted to make sure if she was happy.

“Are you happy with him?” Mo Ruolan asked while holding her daughter’s hands with love but before Jiang Yuyan could say anything, someone answered on her behalf.

“Not done, Mom! You are asking obvious questions to her. Are you happy with him? Does he treat you well? Bla Bla Bla? Don’t be a typical mother in our society. Ask something different and new. Be a creative mother.”

That was Jiang Yang again who came to disturb the private mother-daughter talk. He was standing in a door with his legs crossed while resting his shoulder on one side of the door with his hands folded in front of his chest.

Both turned their heads to look at him. Jiang Yuyan smiled to hear it while Mo Ruolan frowned and asked, “So what should I ask her? Tell me what is being creative?”

Stepping towards them from the door, he replied calmly, “Mom! Ask her something like, if she kissed him or not. If she does then when and how was it? How far they went in their

relationship. What I mean is, instead of a mother, be her friend”

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yuyan’s face reddened with embarrassment. She panicked and said, “Mom! Don’t listen to him. Just ask what you were asking and I am really happy with Lu Qiang.”

“See, it was the obvious question mom. She would say yes to it all as she is in love with him,” he said while pulling one chair in the room towards the couch and sat in front of them.

Mo Ruolan didn’t know how to react. Whether to laugh or scold her blatant son. She looked at him as he sat in the chair and said, “You are here to be her friend so let me be just her mother.”

She then looked at Jiang Yuyan and said with excitement on her face, “I am sure he might have kissed you lots of time as I can see he is a dominant male, so now tell me how was the kiss. I mean your first kiss?”

With this question from a mother, all colors on Jiang Yuyan’s face flew away and she exclaimed, “Not you too, Mom.”

Jiang Yang couldn’t hold back his laughter and said, “Haha! That’s like my creative mother. C’mon, ask her something more intense and spicy as I want to know it too.”

Jiang Yuyan gave her brother a killer gaze and said, “Stop it, brother Yang!” She then looked at her mother and said in a pleading way while holding her hand. “Mom, don’t be like him.”

“I am not like him. I am asking this as a mother because I am also curious to know how is my daughter’s romance life.” Mo Ruolan replied as not falling for her daughter’s pleading.

Seeing her mother, acting like her brother Jiang Yuyan felt frustrated even more and exclaimed, “Gosh! Both of you.”

Jiang Yang always enjoyed to see his sister annoyed and said, “Don’t be shy sis. Tell our mother your first kiss which I happened to witness, by chance.”

242 Thoughtful Jiang Yang...

Jiang Yang always enjoyed seeing his sister being annoyed and said, “Don’t be shy sis. Tell our mother your first kiss which I happened to witness, by chance.”

Mo Ruolan was surprised to hear what Jiang and said and she exclaimed, “Really? Did you see it? When and where? I...I mean, how?” while Jiang Yuyan held her head in both hands, almost cursing her brother.

Jiang Yang laughed to see his mother behaving like an excited teenage girl who is eager to know about her friend’s first kiss. He controlled himself and replied calmly, “It was in the Grandpa and grandma Lu’s wedding anniversary.”

“What! But at that time they even didn’t know each other properly if I am right. Then how?”

“You don’t know Lu Qiang well, Mom. I told you he was in love with her since our childhood days so he didn’t need to know her. He simply went to her and kiss her to show his true intentions.” Jiang Yang replied.

“So, he kissed her out of the blue without giving her any intimation,” Mo Ruolan asked being excited to know her daughter’s first kiss.

“Yes, and our girl didn’t resist him and let him kiss her.” Jiang Yang continued and Jiang Yuyan felt like to dig a hole somewhere and hide in it.

“Ohh! That’s so romantic,” Mo Ruolan said and patted her daughter’s head.

“It seems like it,” Jiang replied again, willing to expose everything related to his sister.

Mo Ruolan moved her sight back to her son after admiring her daughter with her excited and loving sight and asked, “So he is an alpha?”

“Super and high-quality alpha. Her love life is going to be rocking mom,”

Jiang Yang answered shamelessly which made Jiang Yuyan feeling to kill him.

Mo Ruolan was happy and said, “That’s cool then. I wish her to have it even better than mine.”

“I bet,” he said and winked at his mother.

These mother and son were busy in their gossiping and the person they were talking about was sitting there silently, looking at her shameless brother and a bold mother. They forgot Jiang Yuyan was sitting there and they were talking about her personal life.

Jiang Yuyan was frowning to see this and said, “Stop it both of you. It’s my personal life you are talking about and having fun on it.”

Not minding to her angry reaction, Jiang yang said, “In this house, there is nothing personal and secret. We are friends and you should share your things with us,”

“I don’t want to,” Jiang Yuyan replied with an angry tone.

“Okay, we won’t force you. Just tell me how was that first kiss of yours. Did you like it?”

“Mom!” she exclaimed to stop her mother.

“Instead of getting angry just tell her or do you want me to tell her as we have talked about it before. Remember? under the sky, that starry night and we shared few things.”

Jiang Yuyan finally gave up and said, “It was really good, mom and yes I liked it”

“Wow! Now I am feeling like my little daughter is a grown-up woman. I can’t believe she had her first kiss. I am so happy for you.” Mo Ruolan said with an ear to ear smile on her face.

Jiang Yang was not satisfied with just this much and said, “That’s like my sister. See, how easy it was to say it. Now tell mother other things too.”

Jiang Yuyan gave him a killer gaze and said, “Brother! Stop being chatterbox gossip queen,”

“Nono! It’s fine. He is right. Tell me other things too. As a mother, I have a right to know everything about you, so tell me.” Mo Ruolan asked which made Jiang Yuyan feel even more embarrassed while Jiang Yang was happy to see her like this.

“What other things mom? There is nothing to tell you,” Jiang Yuyan said as not wanting to disclose more things.

“Don’t lie, little sis. Yet, you haven’t told mother that both of you sleep in the same room and one bed while cuddling each other,” Jiang Yang said shamelessly not having a bit of regret on his face about what he said.

“F**k you!” Jiang Yuyan couldn’t control herself and spurted out these words. She was utterly embarrassed with this in front of her mother as she never even had a boyfriend to share such things with her mother.

It was her first time and she was a grown woman not a teenager girl to say these things immaturely and openly. She grabbed a pillow from a couch and threw it at him.

“You can hit me all you want but don’t take away our mother’s right to know about her daughter’s first love and her all first things. She deserves to feel the happiness of knowing her daughter’s secrets and her personal life.” Jiang Yang said it while raising his hands in front of him to save himself from getting hit by another cushion being thrown by Jiang Yuyan.

With these words from him, Jiang Yuyan put the cushion down. Both ladies understood why he did that. Mo Ruolan was a mother and like any mother, she was waiting for her daughter to have a normal life as the other girls of her age do and share her things with her as a friend. Because of Jiang Yuyan’s past condition, Mo Ruolan never expected much from her daughter but waited for the day to come.

Jiang Yang wanted his mother to experience these things when the mother talks to her daughter about her stuff. Since that incident, Jiang Yuyan shared all her things with her brother

which she actually should have shared with her mother and for this thing, Jiang Yang always felt sad towards Mo Ruolan. Jiang Yuyan, being in love was a happy as well as an emotional thing for Mo Ruolan as her mother.

Jiang Yang got up from his chair and said, “Ladies, my job done here. Now both of you are free to talk about what you want.” Both ladies didn’t react and Jiang Yang left the room, leaving them alone.

243 Teasing...

Once Jiang Yang left, both ladies didn't know what to say and kept silent in an awkwardness. In a while finally, Mo Ruolan spoke, "If you are not comfortable, we can talk later and it's not necessary to tell me everything as I can understand everyone has a right to their privacy."

Jiang Yuyan nodded to what her mother said. Standing up from a couch, Mo Ruolan said, "Let's go to the living room now and see what our men are doing. Jiang Yuyan stood up too and hugged her mother suddenly and said, "Thank you for being the best mother in the world."

These words from Jiang Yuyan brought tears in Mo Ruolan's eyes and she said, "Unfortunately I couldn't do anything much for you, my dear. It was your brother who was your mother all these years."

Moving back a little to be able to see her mother's face, Jiang Yuyan said "No mother, you did a lot for me and I won't forget it ever. About sharing my things with you, I want to do it too, like other girls who share with their mothers,"

Smiling to hear heartwarming words, she said with a love in her eyes for her daughter, "Thank you so much, my dear. I am fortunate to have a daughter like you. I wish for, all the happiness in the world for you."

Both finished their emotional talk and came out in the living room where all three men were talking about something. Lu Qiang noticed Jiang Yuyan's moist eyes and signaled her asking what happened. Jiang Yuyan shook her head lightly as saying nothing.

After a while, it was a time when Lu Qiang wanted to leave as he had few things to do and said, "I will take a leave now as I have some work." When he said it Jiangs looked at each other as they thought Jiang Yuyan will leave too but suddenly Lu Qiang spoke to look at Jiang Yuyan and said, "I will leave now."

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with puzzled expressions and said, “I?”

“I thought, as you are meeting your parents after so long, you would like to spend a few days with them.”

Jiang Yuyan was happy to hear it as they didn't talk about her staying back with her parents. she didn't expect it from Lu Qiang and said while still being surprised, “O...of course I want. Thank you, Lu Qiang.” Hearing it, others were happy too.

When Lu Qiang said bye and was about to leave, Jiang Yang signaled his sister and said in a mute ‘Go’. Jiang Yuyan was still in her surprised mode to understand she should go out to see him off. Understanding her brother's signal, Jiang Yuyan immediately strode towards Lu Qiang and went out of the home with him.

Once they reach out to the elevator, Lu Qiang pressed the button to call it and said as giving out a deep sigh, “I am going to miss you badly.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan looked at him. Giving him a peck on the lips she said, “I will miss you too.”

Lu Qiang controlled his desire to kiss her at the moment as they were standing outside of the home and said, “See you soon.” He entered the elevator and waved his hand to say goodbye. Jiang Yuyan did the same and stood there until the door closed.

As Jiang Yuyan went back with a smile on her face, her parents and brother were looking at her while sitting on a sofa. She suddenly stopped in her tracks, coughed a little, controlled her smile and sat quietly beside her mother.

“So?” Jiang Yang asked to look at her while lying lazily in the sofa.

“What?” she asked in return.

“For how long are you going to be here?”

“Till Mom-dad are here in China?”

Jiang Yang sighed and said, "That's what you thought but I am asking how many days he can stay away from you and allow you to stay with us."

"He is fine with me staying here as he asked me to stay back," she replied being sure about her man's decision.

"That I know sis, but I know him well too. I won't be surprised if he comes back here in the middle of the night," these words from Jiang Yang startled her and she said while hiding her embarrassment in front of her father, behind her coughing, "Cough-Cough! You started again brother Yang."

"Stop teasing her Jiang Yang." Mo Ruolan warned her son, then looked at her daughter and said: "We are fine if he comes here in the middle of the night as we trust him, so you don't have to feel embarrassed about it."

Jiang Yuyan was getting buried under a load of embarrassment because of her bold brother and mother as her father was there who was going through the newspaper, listening to everything they said.

Mo Ruolan noticed her sight on her father and said, "Don't worry about your father."

"Mom! I..I don't know how to deal with both of you. You and brother Yang are too much," she said annoyingly.

"Stop teasing her both of you." Suddenly Jiang Peizhi spoke when he saw his daughter was annoyed because of teasing. Hearing his warning, Jiang Yuyan felt relaxed while the other two kept quiet.

Then, Jiang Peizhi looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, "If he comes here in the middle of the night, I will throw him out of the house so don't worry. I will make sure, he won't disturb my princess.

"Dad! No!" hearing her father, Jiang Yuyan couldn't help but exclaim in a denial. All three looked at her with teasing smiles on their faces. Jiang Yang realized her father was playing along with her brother and mother too and felt even more embarrassed.

"I.. mean... to say...."

“We got it very well what you meant to say so just chill.” They were happy to see her like this in love and going through a new phase of her life. Seeing her smiling and after talking to Jiang Yang and Lu Qiang, Jiang Peizhi was sure, his daughter was going to be happy from now on.

244 Missing Her...

Lu Qiang had nothing to do as it was the weekend so he was trying to keep himself busy by going to the office even on weekends and working on not so important things. As Jiang Yuyan was in Jiang residence, he was missing her but wanted to distract himself from the urge of going back to her by being busy with work

In Lu Mansion, after dinner, Lu Qiang was talking to his father about his conversation between him and Jiang Peizhi when Lu Jinhai asked him about it.

Lu Jinhai listened to his son and said, "I know, he is worried because of her past but he will understand once he will see her happy with you."

"Hmm! I know," Lu Qiang replied.

"Finally, days arrived when my friend would be able to see his daughter happy and now he can be relaxed from all the worries about her." Lu Jinhai was happy for his friend as he was aware of how much hurt his friend was with the thought of not being able to protect his daughter.

Having pride for his son in his eyes he called him, "Lu Qiang."

Lu Qiang who was immersed in his thoughts. He looked up and asked, "Yes, father."

"I am glad that you are the reason for my friend's happiness and what you did for Jiang Yuyan, I am proud of you for that. Make sure, she won't ever cry because of you and I always want to see her smiling."

"I too want the same father and I will try my best to do so." Lu Qiang replied

"We all trust you and when it is about Jiang Yuyan, we can only trust you. She is a special child. A lovely and innocent one."

“Yes, She is, but not a child now.” Lu Qiang said sarcastically with a smile on his face.

Lu Jinhai smiled to hear it and said, “For you, she is your woman but for me, she would always be like a child even if she gives birth to my grandchildren.”

“You have to wait for it,” said Lu Qiang

“I know and we are ready to wait. Just live your life peacefully with her as its finally your time to be happy. Your father can’t ever forget how much and what you sacrificed for all of us and for that I will always be guilty towards you,” He said while being sad remembering the past.

Lu Qiang was aware of his father’s pain whenever he thought about the past and said, “No one forced me. It was my choice, so you don’t have to feel guilty about it, father.

After talking to his father, Lu Qiang went back to his room to sleep. He tried everything to fall asleep but nothing was working and he couldn’t sleep. Finally, he went to Jiang Yuyan’s bedroom and slept in her bed. Everything in the room was reminding him of her and he was not able to sleep again.

When he lied in a bed, he could smell her scent in a bedsheet on the side where she used to sleep and it was making him restless as he felt like he wanted her badly. He changed his side to avoid smelling it but other things they did in the room started to play in his head and it made difficult for him to bear with it.

Tired of this torture, Lu Qiang sat up in a bed. He tried to clear his mind by running his hands on his face and his hair with eyes shut tightly. In a while he opened his eyes and got off the bed, having an expression on his face as he found the solution. He went downstairs, strode out of the mansion. Picking up his car keys from the guard, he went to the car and left the mansion in the middle of the night.

He drove faster as he was going to catch something. He reached to Jiang residence In half of the time that required to cover a distance from Lu Mansion to Jiang residence. It was the middle of the night so he thought, it was a bad idea to go

there but he couldn't stop himself and did what he should not. He reached in front of the Jiang residence's door but he was in a dilemma whether to go inside or not.

He knew the password of the door lock but he couldn't press it. If Jiang Yuyan was alone he would have entered inside without giving a second thought but her parents were there so he was thinking whether to go inside or not.

He was not worried about what they will think about him but he was worried if it would make Jiang Yuyan embarrassed in front of her parents. He dropped the plan and decided to go back. When he turned around to leave the place, just then the door opened and a voice stopped him.

"If you have come this far so make some efforts to come inside too."

Recognizing Jiang Yang's voice Lu Qiang stopped and turned around. It was the first time Lu Qiang couldn't say anything. "Come inside," Jiang Yang said and went inside by keeping the door open for Lu Qiang.

Being quiet, Lu Qiang went inside and closed the door. "It is the first time when I am getting to see you so nervous. Are you scared of my parents?" asked Jiang Yang while walking towards the living area in front of Lu Qiang.

"Nope!" Lu Qiang replied in a firm voice.

"Then?" Jiang Yang asked.

"I didn't want to make her feel embarrassed in front of her parents."

"Hmm! As you are here, far away from your home, in the middle of the night then stay here. I won't mind sharing my bed with a handsome man like you," Jiang Yang said with a teasing smile on his face.

"But I mind sharing a bed with a moron like you," replied Lu Qiang being annoyed by his teasing smile.

245 Soft And Delicate...

Hearing Lu Qiang denying his offer, Jiang Yang said, "Fine then, you are free to sleep here on the sofa in the living room." As he said, he moved to one side to make space for Lu Qiang to step towards that huge semicircular sofa in the living room.

Lu Qiang stood rooted to where he was with his hands tucked in his pant's pockets as being not interested in his offer. "I am going to your room and you are sleeping here," He said while pointing towards the sofa with his chin as he was ordering Jiang Yang.

Jiang Yang exclaimed to see it, "What the F**k! You are telling me not to sleep in my room. Let me wake up my parents to welcome this midnight guest. Mo...m..m."

Before Jiang Yang could call his parents, Lu Qiang covered his mouth with his hands to stop him from calling his mom and said in a low voice, "I am coming to your room. Now keep quiet and let's go upstairs." Jiang Yang nodded as saying 'Yes' so Lu Qiang removed the hand from his mouth.

Jiang Yang smiled mischievously as his hollow threat worked on Lu Qiang and said, "That's like a good boy." Both went upstairs to the first floor. As they reach there, Jiang Yang opened his room's door. He turned and stood in the door while looking at Lu Qiang blocking a way to enter the bedroom. Lu Qiang looked at him with a puzzled expression as thinking about what happened.

"There is one another and the person inside won't mind sharing her bed with you so goodnight and sleep tight," Jiang Yang said it and closed the door of his room.

Lu Qiang was standing outside of the room while looking at the closed door thinking about what had just happened. He collected his thoughts and went to Jiang Yuyan's room hesitantly. He came here to be with her but as her parents were in the home he was hesitant to do so.

When he opened the door and went inside, in the dim light of night-lamp he could see she was sleeping soundly. He went to bed with light footsteps without making a sound. As he reached the bed, he thought to look at her ‘How can she sleep so peacefully without me being with her?’. He climbed onto the bed and slept beside her on his one side to be able to look at her face.

Looking at her peacefully sleeping he didn’t disturb her. He kept looking at her and fell asleep in some time. Just before the dawn, Jiang Yuyan woke up and she felt something was off. She felt a weight on her stomach and thighs. Also, she could feel someone’s hot breath in the crook of her neck with a soft pair of lips touching the corner of her shoulder.

Her body stiffened to feel it and she slowly moved her face to look at the person beside her. She realized that was Lu Qiang but she was shocked to see him. She thought she was in a dream and pinched her arm to make it sure.

“Aaauuch! She whined as she pinched herself a bit hard. Hearing her whining, Lu Qiang opened his eyes and asked, “What happened?” in his sleepy and hoarse voice.

She looked into his eyes, which were still half-opened due to sleep in them and asked with a surprised expression on her face, “First tell me how and when you came here?”

“I came a few hours back when you were in a deep sleep.” He replied casually without noticing how shocked she was and tightened his grip around her by pulling her towards him with the hands circling her.

He buried his face back in her nape and the leg resting on her thigh moved further to pull her towards him. She was trapped not being able to move a bit. When he was satisfied with it he said, “You are so soft and delicate. Let me sleep like this for a while more.”

Jiang Yuyan held back herself for a while but asked again, “How did you come inside? Did you unlock the door like last time as you know the security code.”

“No, I didn’t,” He replied while feeling her soft body by nuzzling in her nape and caressing the soft skin on her stomach.

Jiang Yuyan was immune to his touch right now as her mind was occupied with different thoughts. “Then how? Don’t tell me, you pressed the doorbell and my parents opened the door for you.”

Lu Qiang was not in a mood to answer her as he just wanted to sleep while squeezing her. “Why does it matter so much? Aren’t you happy to see me here?”

“I am but I...I don’t know. My parents, what they will think to see you in my bedroom,” she replied.

“Let them think what they want. As I am already here so we can’t help it,” he said as trying to be on top of her. Once he was above her, he opened his eyes completely to look into her starry and bright ones.

She looked back into his eyes and asked, “It must be brother Yang who helped you to come here.”

“Hmm!” he replied while kissing her lightly on her neck as he was not interested in what she was saying and he just wanted to taste her. He sniffed in her neck deeply while kissing and said, “You smell heavenly” and continued what he was doing.

Jiang Yuyan was not paying attention to him. Both had different thoughts in their minds. Realizing it’s still dark, she said, “It’s still dawn. You can go back before they wake up.”

Hearing it, Lu Qiang lifted his head and asked to look at her, “Are you embarrassed to have me here?”

“Nope! It’s not that. How can I be? But Mom-Dad is here so...” she replied not being able to say what she wanted to.

“Okay! I understand.” Lu Qiang said it and got off from the bed.

247 Whatever You Say...

More she was trying to speak, more Lu Qiang was sealing her lips harshly. In the end, she had to give up and surrender to him. Realizing she stopped resisting and after kissing her till she became breathless, Lu Qiang parted away to look at her. He smiled to see her gasping for air and to see her moist eyes.

“You never listen huh?” she said after taking a deep breath.

“If you will say something to stop me again then I know how to shut your mouth. Try to say something more,” He said as warning her with one corner of his lips curved up.

Jiang Yuyan clenched her lips together as hiding them by pressing between her teeth and shook her head as saying no.

Seeing her clenching her lips tightly and refusing to kiss him, Lu Qiang said smiling slyly, “So you want me to go another way. Fine then,” Saying it he moved his hand towards her waist and tucked his fingers on one side of her night pants as to indicate he was about to pull it down.

With her eyes wide open, Jiang Yuyan stopped his hands by holding it with hers and said, “No! Not here.”

“Why?” He asked.

“We are not in our home. Someone might hear... cough cough...” she replied hesitantly.

“Hear what?” He asked while not in a mood to retreat his hand.

“You know what I mean, so please,” She replied

“No! I don’t,” he said in a firm voice, not wanting to surrender to her pleading.

She gave up and decided to speak clearly as to know he won’t listen until he hears it word by word. “If someone hears me making those sounds, it would be embarrassing.”

“I will make sure to seal your mouth to stop you from making those seductive sounds, though I don’t want to stop them,” he replied.

Hearing it and imagining the scenario in her mind to what might happen, she exclaimed, “No way. I will die with suffocation.”

“You won’t die. I won’t let you,” he said and tried to pull her night pants down.

“Still, no. Please, listen to me this one,” she pleaded to see how determined he was.

He stopped and asked, “Okay! But what I will get in return for listening to you?”

“Whatever you say,” she replied without giving a second thought about it.

“Really?” He asked to make it sure with a sly smile on his face with his one eyebrow raised.

Seeing his expressions, she gulped and just said, “Hmmm!”

“Okay, be ready for the surprise then,” he said as retreating his hand.

As Jiang Yuyan gave out a sigh of relief, Lu Qiang said, “So let’s continue with a kiss only.”

Hearing it she was stunned again, “But, you just agreed to listen to me.”

“That was for not going down on you but this is just a kiss and there won’t be any sounds as I am gonna stop them from coming out of your throat,” he replied and leaned to kiss her again.

Jiang Yuyan thought like being trapped again and said, “But not a longer one.”

“Okay!” He said and started to kiss her. After sucking and nibbling her lips, he slipped his tongue in her cavern and tasted her sweetness. He was not in a mood to let go of her. How much he did it, it was never enough for him.

When he parted away, she said while catching her breath, “I said, not a longer one.”

“It was the shortest, I could go for. Do you want to see the longer one?” He asked

“Nono!” she exclaimed and said, “I am tired now. Let’s stop.”

“Lu Qiang moved to one side from her body and said, “You get tired so soon. I think I should keep you in our home for few days and ask the butler to make some nutritious food for you, daily, so that after our wedding you will never feel tired like this as I am not going to leave you alone even for a single moment.”

“No need. I am strong enough but you are too much for me,” she replied to look at him with an angry gaze.

“You will like this ‘Too Much’ in the future. Trust me,” he replied shamelessly as not minding her frowning.

“Hmm! Let’s sleep now. In the morning father will get to see you here too. Don’t know what he will think,” she said and closed her eyes.

“Don’t worry. Your mother might have told him till now and he would be prepared to see me on the breakfast table. So don’t worry, he won’t get any kind of shock,” he replied to calm her down.

“I don’t have any words to say to you, my brother and my mother too. You people are the same, too bold,” She said and turned around to face her back to him.

Seeing her turning her back to him, he smiled and he felt like to tease her even more, “I like you being bold, even more,”

“Stop talking now and lets sleep for a while,” she replied as pretending she didn’t get what he said.

“Hmm! Let me cuddle my soft bunny,” saying it, Lu Qiang shifted towards her side and hugged her from behind. He kissed her on the back of her neck and said, “Sleep well.”

Next Morning on the breakfast table...

When Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang went to the dining room, Jiang Peizhi, Mo Ruolan, and Jiang Yang were already present there while waiting for this couple. They wished morning to both of them and both sat on the chairs beside each other. Seeing her father, Jiang Yuyan was a bit embarrassed and didn't look at him.

As guessed by Lu Qiang, Jiang Peizhi was not surprised to see him in the dining room. He was fine to see him early in the morning as he was already informed about it by Mo Ruolan and he didn't mind it as he trusted Lu Qiang. Other than his son Jiang Yang, Lu Qiang was the only person he felt like to trust with Jiang Yuyan.

248 Curious Jiang Yang..

When Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan sat in the chairs, breakfast was already served in the dishes by a servant. All started to eat the delicious breakfast made by Mo Ruolan personally as her future son-in-law was there and she wanted everything to be perfect.

Seeing Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan sitting and eating comfortably, Jiang Yang said, “Both of you are late. Seems like you slept late and woke up late” and winked at his sister.

Their parents were startled with the sudden question from Jiang Yang to his sister but they smiled to hear it and continued eating as they knew what was going to come next.

Jiang Yuyan was sitting opposite to her brother. When she heard it, she kicked him lightly on his feet under the table, as asking him to stop while

Lu Qiang was sitting quietly while eating as not affected by his words. Lu Qiang was used to the shameless behavior of Jiang Yang and he was already expecting it.

“AAuuuch sis! You hurt me,” Jiang Yang whined.

“I didn’t hit you this hard. Don’t do overacting,” Jiang Yuyan said harshly.

Rubbing his feet with a hand he asked as showing he did nothing wrong, “Why did you hit me? I am just curious to know what both of you did.”

“If you want to hit him again, tell me I will do it even better,” said Lu Qiang and continued his breakfast.

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh and said, “Sigh! Being curious and asking simple questions can get one beaten up nowadays. Not done.”

“Ask something that someone can answer you,” said Jiang Yuyan

“What’s difficult in answering what both of you did,” Still, Jiang Yang was not ready to give up.

Lu Qiang pinched the space between his eyebrows and said after giving out a deep sigh while looking straight into Jiang Yang’s eyes, “We kissed for some time and slept while cuddling each other tightly, in a bed. If there is more than this in the future, I will personally come and update you.”

Lu Qiang was not hesitant to say it. He knew Jiang Yang won’t stop until he gets an answer. To handle his grandpa and his shameless friend, he always had to become one of them.

“Cough- Cough!” Jiang Yuyan didn’t expect Lu Qiang to say it in front of her parents who were now focused on food as not wanting to react to it but Jiang Yang was just being himself.

“See how easy it was to say,” Jiang Yang said to look at his sister.

Hearing it, Mo Ruolan was smiling while Jiang Peizhi was focused on eating, trying to keep his expression neutral. The atmosphere was playful. Mo Ruolan didn’t want to spoil it but still said, “My dear son, concentrate on eating. You are looking weak nowadays. This is how you are going to give us grandchildren.

“I have a time mom, till then you can start expecting grandchildren from your daughter. From what I see, I think soon you will get to see them playing in our home,” Jiang Yang said and winked to see at Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan frowned to hear it, “Stop it, brother. At Least behave in front of dad.”

“What? Dad understands everything. We didn’t come to this world directly from the sky.” He then looked at his father and asked, “Am I right, dad?”

“Cough-Cough!” Jiang Peizhi was startled again. seeing him coughing, Mo Ruolan passed him water. Drinking water, he looked at his daughter who was eating her head down being embarrassed.

Clearing his throat he said, “Hmm! I would be happy to see my grandchildren.” He didn’t want her to feel shy about it and

feel embarrassed in front of him anymore. The things they were discussing at the moment, he never expected this day to come.

Hearing it, she was surprised a bit and said, “Dad, not you too.”

“Dad is right and stop being shy all the time. Learn something from your husband. See how bold he is,” Jiang Yang said while chewing the food.

“Having, all you bold people around me is enough. Let me be myself,” she replied in an angry tone.

Lu Qiang patted her head and said, “Be the way you like.” She was happy to hear it but just then he spoke again, “I am happy with you being bold only in front of me.”

She gulped to hear it and exclaimed, “What? When did I?”

Lu Qiang looked at her with a questioning look and asked, “Do you want me to say it in front of your parents?” This made her feel nervous and she kept quiet.

Hearing it, the gossip queen Jiang Yang felt excited and asked, “What? Is my little sister know how to be bold? You can tell me I am her brother, not her parent.”

“No!” she exclaimed and said, “Both of you are too much,” and put her chopsticks back on a table as showing her protest to eat further.

“Ohh, don’t do this, sis. You need the energy to be bold. Eat well and let him tell me,” Saying he looked at Lu Qiang, expecting to get an answer but Lu Qiang avoided him and fed Jiang Yuyan as she was sulking.

“It’s useless to argue with you,” she said and ate what Lu Qiang offered her.

Seeing him taking care of her, Jiang Yuyan’s parents felt glad and continued their breakfast with smiles on their faces. The argument between their kids was normal for them so they just preferred to hear it quietly and it was fun.

“Then don’t do it. Just tell me what I ask. It’s as simple as that,” Jiang Yang said again.

“you...”

“Stop it both of you and eat,” Said Mo Ruolan to finally stop them.

The atmosphere was lively due to the banter between these two. All had smiles on their faces except for Jiang Yuyan who was still sulking because of her brother and Lu Qiang was trying to calm her down with a smile on his face to look at her like this.

Jiang Yang was smiling too and winked to look at Lu Qiang to which, Lu Qiang replied with a smile.

249 Mini Trip...

It was Sunday so Lu Qiang didn't have any work to do. The previous day he somehow spent in the office though it was Saturday and off but today he didn't want to spend time alone in the office so he decided to go out with Jiang yang. They called Lu Feng with them too.

When they decided on this plan, they thought Jiang Yuyan should be with them too as she will get bored at home. All four friends decide to visit a few places they used to visit in their childhood. Lu Feng came to Jiang residence to pick up these three in an expensive and luxurious car which was spacious and comfortable for them. He was wearing white round neck T-shirt, brown color leather jacket blue jeans and sneakers. With these clothes and a Polaroids covering his eyes, he looked devilishly handsome.

Once he reached Jiang residence, he called Jiang Yang, "I am here. Come downstairs if you guys are ready."

"Why are you in so much hurry darling. Don't you want to meet my parents and your in-laws?" Jiang Yang wanted to call him upstairs to meet his parents as he still didn't get a chance to meet them and get familiar with them after so many years.

Everything was going too smooth and everyone was happy so Jiang Yang wanted Lu Feng to be a part of this happiness too instead of being aloof to everyone.

Lu Feng didn't want to go there but who could say no to Jiang Yang and he had to go. When he went upstairs all were in the living room, waiting for him as Jiang Yang already informed them about his arrival. Before ringing a doorbell, Lu Feng removed his goggle and tucked in his pocket. Jiang Yang opened the door and said, "Welcome, my darling. Ohh, wait! Wow, you are looking damn handsome. I should protect you from girls today so that they won't snatch you away from me."

"Stop saying bulls**t, at least in front of your parents." Lu Feng said in a low voice but it didn't affect Jiang Yang and he

said in his normal tone that everyone heard, “Rest assured darling, my parents know my preference” as saying they went to the living room.

When they reached near the sofa, Mo Ruolan said to look at her son, “These days I am worried about your preference my son and I am thinking, I should only hope to get grandchildren from my daughter but you.”

“Don’t worry Mom, there are other ways through which I can give you dozens of grandchildren,” he said and winked at his mother.

“You shameless brat!”, Mo Ruolan exclaimed as hitting him on the shoulder again while others smiled to hear it.

“Aauuchh! Thank god mom, you can only reach to my shoulder and not to my head or I would be dumb by getting continuous hitting on the head,” he said while rubbing his shoulder just then Lu Feng hit him lightly on the head and said, “It won’t make a difference to already dumb person.”

“Aauuuch darling it hurts.”

“Ignore him, Lu Feng. come and sit here,” Mo Ruolan said while pointing towards space on the sofa.

Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan were happy to see Lu Feng in their home as they were meeting him after so long. When they came to attend the elder Lu’s wedding anniversary, they couldn’t get a chance to talk to him.

Jiang Peizhi smiled to see him and said, “Nice to see you, Lu Feng. Have a seat”

“Me too, Uncle,” Lu Feng replied and sat on the sofa beside Lu Qiang who was sitting with Jiang Yuyan on that huge semicircular sofa.

Jiang Yang sat beside him and said, “You don’t have to be nervous in front of my parents darling. I can see, they liked you.”

Lu Feng frowned to hear it just then Mo Ruolan said, “Be good Jiang Yang he came here for the first time when we are here. Give him some slack.”

“As you say, mother,” he replied.

It was a day for the outing for them so all were ready in casual clothes. Jiang Yang wore a mustered color T-shirt with blue jeans. Lu Qiang was, as usual, wearing his favorite colors, full-sleeved black T-shirt with white jeans. Jiang Yuyan was wearing a white short-sleeved lace top with black jeans.

All four left the Jiang residence to go out on a mini trip to visit the places they decided. As they reached in a parking lot, Jiang Yang asked, “Who is going to drive?”

“Of course me.” Lu Feng replied.

“Well, that’s fine but we can change turns later,” said Lu Qiang to which others agreed.

“I want to drive too.” Suddenly, Jiang Yuyan spoke that made these three men look at her in a question with the same expressions on their faces.

Jiang Yuyan passed her sight across their faces and asked, “What? Why are you all looking at me like this?”

“We all want to come back in a single piece so no driving for you.” Jiang Yang replied to which the other two agreed.

“But I can drive.” She tried to protest.

Jiang Yang went closer to her and said while patting her head, “Little Sister, we three know how scared you are when you are behind the wheel so, NO!”

“What? You... You told them too.” She was a bit angry to realize it and said, “It was long back but now I am fine.”

“Yes! Once we were talking about you so I happened to tell them what you did when we were in the Us after you just learned how to drive. You almost ran the car on a roadside stall thank god the owner was on the side and nobody was harmed.” he replied.

“I won’t be like that and I was new to driving. Let me drive today,” she said as not in a mood to listen to him.

251 Her Hidden Side...

Just then Lu Feng's phone rang and he had to attend it. That area was remote so there was a bit of a network problem and he had to go away from the place where they were sitting. The call was very important so he asked Jiang yuyan to wait for him for a few minutes to which Jiang Yuyan nodded as saying yes.

All this while someone was observing Jiang Yuyan from afar, a boy who was standing on the roadside while talking to his two friends. He was looking at Jiang Yuyan since the moment she arrived there. As usual, she was looking pretty to grab anyone's attention though she was just wearing a simple white short-sleeved lace top and jeans with a pair of sneakers and her hair tied in a loose bun.

The boy looked in his early twenties. He signaled his friends who looked the same age as him to look at Jiang Yuyan and one of them said, "New girl!" All were smiling slyly to look at her. When the boy saw Lu Feng left Jiang Yuyan alone, he stopped them and said, "Let me deal with her" and strode towards her with two of his friends following him.

Jiang Yuyan was sitting quietly by looking here and there to observe the place as it was different from her childhood days being unaware of the trouble coming in her direction.

As those boys reached to her, one who was observing her said, "You look new here."

Jiang Yuyan looked at their faces and understood those were not good people and avoid them.

"I am asking you something, girl," the boy said again.

"Yes I am new here so leave me alone as I don't talk to strangers," she replied feeling annoyed to feel the peace around her getting disturbed by these boys.

"But we can get to know each other as we are strangers. What say?" the boy asked again not paying attention to she was not

interested.

“I don’t want to,” saying it she stood up and decided to leave the place but the boy held her hand. This touch from a stranger passed a wave of anger in her mind and she had a darkness in her eyes which looked scary.

She could handle anything in her life but getting touched by a stranger like this with a force, was an unbearable thing for her. What happened in her childhood was the reason she had this extreme reaction towards it.

She turned her head to look back. First, she passed her sight to her hand where that boy was holding her hand and then looked at the boy in his eyes.

Looking into her eyes a boy felt a bit nervous but he collected himself thinking she was just a girl and other than looking angry what more she can do and smiled slyly while the other two boys laughed to look at her.

“Let go of my hand,” Jiang yuyan said with a calm voice but one could see the anger suppressed behind it.

“I won’t. What will you do? Will you call the man who just left you here as a treat for us,” the boy asked.

“I am giving you the last chance. Let go of my hand,” she said again calmly as to stop herself from doing anything to hurt them.

“Haha. I am giving you the last chance to come with us quietly. We will just have a nice chat with you. Is it that bad.” The boy said and tried to pull her towards him but Jiang Yauyn was steady in her place. Before that boy could understand anything, she turned his hand in one swift move which made her stood behind him holding his hand folded to his back. She twisted his hand badly with a sound of bone cracking that he was whining in pain.

“I gave you a warning but you asked for it,” she said and pushed him towards his friends while having no expression on her face but the threatening darkness in her eyes.

The other two boys felt scared to see her eyes which looked like having volcano ready to erupt anytime soon. Also, they

were shocked to see how easily this delicate-looking girl dealt with their friend but still it was not enough to make their brains to work properly. Two boys moved their friend aside and strode towards her.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang were coming back with the cotton candy in their hands and they saw three boys standing in front of Jiang Yuyan, talking to her and she looked unhappy.

They understood the boys were bothering her. Soon they witnessed what Jiang Yuyan did with the boy and he was in a pain lying on the ground.

It was surprising for Lu Qiang as for him she was one delicate girl. Even though, he knew her angry side from the past but seeing it live was a different thing.

He was about to run towards her to protect her but Jiang Yang stopped him saying, "Let her deal with them. I want you to see this side of her." Jiang Yang was cool about it and didn't feel worried even a bit.

"What are you saying Jiang Yang, those are three and she is alone," Saying it he was about to take a step further, Jiang Yang spoke, "Don't you want to know everything about her?" These words from Jiang Yang stopped Lu Qiang and he looked back at him.

Jiang Yang had a calm expression on his face even after seeing his sister dealing with bad boys alone as he was not worried about her even a bit.

"Trust me. She would be fine. I am her brother and do you think I will leave her with foxes after knowing what happened to her in the past," He said calmly to assure Lu Qiang. He stood back to listen to Jiang Yang and decided to see what was going to happen.

Note: 20 chapters are there to read in the privileged subscription. they are in three tiers from lowest to highest one.

The readers who can not get privileged subs rest assure you will get the daily update without a miss. I was late today as I

already informed you guys I was going to be busy. from tomorrow you will get it on its regular timing..

252 Angry Yuyan..

On the other side, Lu Feng too came back after done with the call and saw three boys standing in front of Jiang Yuyan. Before he could step forward, he was shocked to see Jiang Yuyan dealing with one of the boys with ease and he couldn't believe his eyes.

As Lu Feng was about to run towards her, his sight crossed Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang, who were looking at them as bystanders. Jiang Yang noticed Lu Feng running towards his sister from the side opposite to them so he signaled him with a hand to stop at his place.

Having puzzled expression on his face, Lu Feng stopped as thinking there must be a reason Jiang Yang stopped him and also Lu Qiang was standing there too. If there was something serious, Lu Qiang would be the first person to go to her instead of being a bystander.

As two boys strode towards her, Jiang Yuyan made them taste the soil on the ground without letting them touch even a single strand of her hair on her head.

In the next few moments, both boys were lying on the ground whining in pain. Jiang Yuyan strode towards them again to beat them with rage in her eyes though her face looked calm. As she was about to go closer to those boys, suddenly she stopped to realize something and stood still in her place.

Seeing her stopped in her tracks, the first boy whose hand Jiang Yuyan twisted before was scared to death to see it and ran away by leaving his friends behind. Seeing their friend running away, the other two boys got up somehow and ran away too.

Jiang Yuyan looked calm and composed, not a single hair on her head was misplaced with this fight. Jiang Yang looked at Lu Qiang who was standing frozen in his place, looking at his delicate woman who looked threatening at the moment. Lu

Feng had the same expressions and looked as he was in a shock too.

“Don’t be so shocked. This is what she is, so never take her for granted. Now let’s go,” Jiang Yang said and both walked towards Jiang Yuyan. Seeing them walking towards her, Lu Feng too stepped towards her in a hurry.

Reaching near her Lu Qiang called her name with a still shocked expression on his face as he was seeing someone else and not the woman he loved, “Yuyan!”

Jiang Yuyan turned to hear her name. Seeing Lu Qiang in front of her, the darkness in her eyes disappear. She ran towards him and hugged tightly while burying her face in the crook of his neck. With her eyes closed, she said, “Where were you? I was scared.”

Once again, Lu Feng and Lu Qiang were shocked because of what she said while Jiang Yang was not shocked at all. Both brothers didn’t expect her to say it after seeing her threatening and angry side.

Lu Qiang handed over the cotton candy in his hands to Lu Feng and hugged her back as he softened to see her like this, being his innocent and delicate woman. Jiang Yang smiled to look at this and Lu Feng was in a dilemma as to what to say at the moment. No one asked her anything and they let her be as she wanted.

“I am sorry to leave you here alone Yuyan,” Lu Feng said feeling guilty towards her.

Jiang Yuyan was still hugging Lu Qiang tightly as showing she was scared and she didn’t reply to Lu Feng.

“It’s fine Lu Feng, those boys ran away as they might have realized their mistake.” Lu Qiang replied while Jiang Yang was quiet all the time with a smile on his face to see his sister acting all scared and cute.

After eating cotton candy, they went back to the car with Jiang Yuyan still holding Lu Qiang’s hand tightly to show she needed him to protect her. They sat back in the car on their respective seats.

Lu Qiang continued caressing the back of her palm with his thumb to make her feel better. After this incident, the atmosphere in the car was not as playful as it was before and all four could realize it. They were immersed in their thoughts.

Jiang Yuyan was aware that they saw her fighting with those boys and the way she handled them. When she was about to move further to beat them again, she noticed Lu Qiang and her brother were standing at a distance with the cotton candy in their hands and she stopped.

She didn't know why exactly she acted like it when she saw Lu Qiang and why she didn't want to discuss how and what she did with those boys. Somewhere in her heart, she just wanted to feel being protected by the person she loved and always wished to be his delicate woman. This new turn of her life, she didn't want to spoil it by showing this side of hers which she was hiding since long back.

Further, they visited a few more places from their childhood days, the parks and their favorite places to eat. They went to the hilly area in the outside of the city where they used to go often on weekends. The whole place was green everywhere with one tree on the hill and few beautiful ornamental plants around it.

Lu Qiang has one old pic from this place with him in which Jiang Yuyan was smiling ear to ear, holding a cat in her hands and standing on a wooden block to match with the heights of these three boys standing behind her. They recalled that day and all had smiles on their faces as it was one of the special days, Jiang Yuyan's birthday.

"Remember, the last time we came here was Yuyan's birthday?" Jiang Yang said while looking around the place once they reached the top of the hill under that tree.

253 Looking Like Dirty Chickens...

“Hmm! We decided to come here only on her next birthday but before that, you guys left for the USA,” replied Lu Feng forgetting about what happened on her birthday when they went to the USA. With these words from him, there was a sudden silence and no one spoke. Lu Feng realized it and looking at her with a face full of guilt he said, “I am sorry, Yuyan.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled to see him and said, “It’s okay, Lu Feng. I have the best memories from my last birthday that I celebrated with Lu Qiang and those were the best moments which helped me forget the bad ones.”

All were happy to hear it. Lu Qian was standing beside her. He held her hand, kissed on her forehead and said while looking into her eyes, “From now on, you will only get the best memories to remember and bad ones will disappear even without you realizing it.”

“Hmm! I know,” she replied while looking into his eyes with a pleasant smile on her face.

“Let’s go somewhere else darling instead of getting our stomachs full with a dog food here,” Jiang Yang said to which Lu Feng replied, “Instead of being with you, I will prefer to eat this dog food.”

“You are hurting me, darling.” As he said it, Lu Feng punched him lightly in a stomach and said, “This is what hurting is.”

“Auuchhch! F**k man.” Jiang Yang exclaimed.

Hearing him cursing, Lu Feng said with a mischievous smile on his face, “This is how you should talk like a man. Stop being my girlfriend.” He was unaware of what was going to come next.

“Ohh! Really?” As saying it, Jiang Yang punched Lu Feng in the stomach too and had the same mischievous smile on his face as Lu Feng had after hitting him.

Holding his stomach, Lu Feng exclaimed, “F**k You!”

“You said, you want a man to man talk, huh? So here it is,” Jiang Yang replied and blew on his knuckles. Lu Feng was ready to hit him again once he overcame the pain he had because of the punch.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were having fun to see them but suddenly she asked Lu Qiang to stop them even if she knew they were just doing it for fun. As both were moving towards each other, Lu Qiang held both of their hands which were ready to punch each other and flipped them on the ground in one swift move.

“Lu Qiang!” Both called his name while being in pain, lying on the ground and said, “F**k you too, man.”

“It was the only way to stop both of you,” Lu Qiang said and offered them his hand to help them to get up from the ground. Both accepted his hand but instead of getting up, they pulled him to the ground. Lu Qiang fell between both of them. Seeing the perfect chance, both hovered over Lu Qiang and held him steady on the ground.

Lu Qiang was not able to move and said, “You guys will pay for it.”

“How can we leave you without taking you with us to the ground and let you taste the soil,” Said Jiang Yang and made him rolled on the ground in the grass. Lu Feng helped him as saying, “Right Jiang Yang, let’s give him some nice beating too.”

Lu Qiang was trying to stop them but both were not ready to listen to him, so Lu Qiang flipped them finding the right moment and hovered over both of them. All three were rolling on the grass while fighting each other with fun, laughing loudly, forgetting they were grown-up men and not kids anymore.

Jiang Yuyan was recording this in mobile while laughing to see these grown-up men acting like kids. Soon the surrounding was filled with the loud laughing sounds of these four.

Suddenly these three grown-up kids stopped to see Jiang Yuyan who was laughing loud. It was the view they were seeing after so many years. since that incident, she forgot laughing like this.

Lying on the ground, Lu Qiang pulled out his mobile phone from his pocket and clicked her. She was so immersed in laughing to see them that she didn't realize what Lu Qiang did. Once she noticed them looking at her surprisingly, she stopped while trying to control her laugh. Her face was red because of too much laughing and she asked, "What?"

These three men shook their heads at the same time all together in sync as saying 'Nothing' so Jiang Yuyan spoke again, "You guys should check a mirror. You are looking like dirty chickens.

They looked completely messed up because of rolling and fighting on the grass. Their clothes and hair were messed up with dried grass leaves stuck in their clothes and hair and faces were dirtied with traces of soil on it.

Jiang Yang immediately held mobile in front of her and clicked them without giving them a chance to say 'No'. She looked at a pic and laughed as saying, "This would be the epic picture. The president, the doctor and the most handsome man alive looking like dirty chickens."

"Hey, don't click me in this condition. It might spoil my handsome image if someone sees me like this," said Jiang Yang while dusting the dirt on him.

"Haha! I won't. Let me click a few more pictures to show it to other family members." Saying it she started to click a few more pictures.

"Noooo!" Hearing the word family members, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng exclaimed at the same time to stop her.

Jiang Yang and Jiang Yuyan both looked at them as thinking what is so wrong about it.

“You can click as much as pictures you want but you can’t show it to others,” Lu Qiang said with a worried expression on his face as he knew, if she wanted to do it, they won’t be able to stop her.

254 Teasing And Annoying Her...

“Let them see how cute both of you look with each other, different from being the icebergs,” Jiang Yuyan replied while clicking few more pics of Lu Qiang and Lu Feng.

“Lu Qiang is right. You can’t show it to not just our family but not even to any other person in the world,” Lu Feng spoke with the same worried expressions as Lu Qiang because he was aware of her stubbornness too.

“Haha! I am planning to enlarge one pic and hang it on the wall of the living room of Lu Mansion so that everyone can see the real you,” Jiang Yuyan said not paying attention to their pleading.

She was clicking the pics from different angles and didn’t realize she reached closer to them. Taking advantage of her careless move, Lu Qiang held her hand and pulled her towards the ground. She was startled with sudden pulling and the mobile in her hands fell on the ground which was picked up by the Lu Feng.

She fell on Lu Qiang but he held her and made her sit with them. She tried to get up but Jiang Yang stopped her by pulling her down which made her sit back again and said, “Where are you going, sis? Be one of us now, a dirty chicken.”

Jiang Yuyan gave her brother a killer gaze but just then her sight caught something. Seeing her mobile in Lu Feng’s hands she exclaimed, “Don’t delete the pics, Lu Feng.”

He looked at her with one corner of her lips upward and said, “Who is deleting the pics? I am going to click the best one now.” As saying it, he held the mobile up to click four of them together.

“Stop!” Suddenly Jiang Yang spoke. All three looked at him to see what happened.

Seeing their curious gazes on him, he replied, “We all are looking like dirty chickens then why not make her the one of us too,” saying it, he messed Jiang Yuyan’s neatly tied hair bun and put some dried grass leaves on her head.

“Brother, stop it.” Jiang Yuyan tried to stop him while Lu brothers were smiling enjoying to see her frowning and acting like a spoiled Jiang Yuyan from the past but no one stopped Jiang Yang.

“Monster!” She exclaimed with anger.

“If we are monsters so this princess won’t suit with us, in the picture. You should at least look like a witch, Yuyan.” Saying it, Jiang Yang held her face to make her look at the mobile camera and Lu Feng clicked a picture.

“Now we can enlarge this one and hang in the living room’s wall of Lu Mansion.” Lu Feng said it and waved the mobile in front of her eyes to show her a pic, making sure she won’t be able to grab the mobile back.

Seeing it she was not happy and said, “Delete it. I am looking like a witch in it.”

Jiang Yang laughed and said, “Witches looks better as their hair is never messed up like what you have right now.”

“You...”

“Guys don’t tease her,” Lu Qiang said to stop them and then looked at Lu Feng, “Give me the mobile,” Lu Qiang said putting his hand forward to get mobile. Lu Feng obediently gave it back to him. Lu Qiang took that mobile and did something with a picture.

Jiang Yuyan was happy to see it and said, “You deleted it?”

“Yes!” he replied to which Lu Feng frowned and said you should have shared it on our mobiles before deleting it.

“Already done.” Lu Qiang replied calmly to which Lu Feng smiled and Jiang Yang laughed loudly.

Jiang Yuyan frowned and got up from her place while dusting her pants and removing dried grass leaves from her hair. All three stood up too and cleaned the dust just as Jiang Yuyan

did. She saw there was something stuck in Lu Qiang's hair and she stepped towards him to take it out.

Standing in front of him she said, "Wait!"

"Hmm!" Lu Qiang looked at her with questioning expression.

Jiang Yuyan didn't answer him and started to remove dried grass leaves from his hair by tiptoeing and holding him at a shoulder for support. She was busy pulling out the dried grass stuck in his hair without even looking at him.

She was so close to him that he could smell her sweet scent and wanted to grab her but he controlled as they were not alone. Moreover, doing it in front of others, he didn't want to upset her.

Lu Qiang lowered his head to let her see it effortlessly. Once she has done with his hair she started cleaning his face. He looked at her serious-looking face and said, "I thought you are angry with me.

"With all you three," she replied while cleaning his face which heard by Lu Feng and Jiang Yang too.

Jiang Yang was still in a fun mood and said, "Ohh! Sis, clean my hair too."

"Ask your darling to do it for you," she replied angrily without even looking at him.

Lu Feng stood silent to see her angry and cleaned Jiang Yang's hair as saying, "Don't annoy her more."

"Hmm!" Jiang Yang replied while Lu Qiang was admiring his beautiful woman who was red in a wave of anger.

Soon it was lunchtime. They left that place and went to a nice restaurant on the highway. On the way to the restaurant Jiang Yuyan was not talking to them and no one dared to bother her. Lu Qiang tried to hold her hand but she retreated it.

When they reached the restaurant, Jiang Yuyan excused herself to go to the washroom. Once she left, these three friends were silent while immersed in their own thoughts. Just then Jiang Yang passed his sight across Lu Qiang and Lu Feng and said,

“Don’t you have any question regarding what happened near sugar candy shop?”

Hearing it both looked at him, “Hmm?”

257 Lu Feng's Realization Of Love..

When two friends Lu Jinhai and Jiang Peizhi were discussing, their kids being happy together, the other four friends were busy in their talk sitting in a patio.

Jiang Yuyan was still sitting quietly after hearing what Lu Qiang and grandpa talked about in front of everyone, so Jiang Yang said, "Get out of it Yuyan. It was a normal talk for Lus and you will get used it."

"Hmm! I know. I can see it as the man with me is way too bold and blatant," She said while looking at Lu Qiang.

"You can't become a Lu if you can't be bold and blatant. These traits are by default in Lus," Lu Feng spoke to which Jiang Yang replied being in a teasing mood, "So why aren't you bold with me darling and always run away from me?"

Lu Feng frowned to hear it and said, "I think you are full of stuff these days and you need to get it out as soon as possible." These words from Lu Feng were way too bold that Jiang Yuyan started to look here and there and Lu Qiang was smiling as it was rare to see Lu Feng talking too bold like this.

Seeing Lu Feng talking like this, Jiang Yang was surprised too but it was not enough to make him shut his shameless mouth and he said, "Owww! It was too much darling. If you are that worried, why don't you just help me to get the stuff out then?" Jiang Yang was one step ahead of him that no one could beat him when it is about being more shameless.

"You..." Lu Feng was too much annoyed with this but before he could say anything someone spoke.

"Both of you, why don't you just get a room in a nice hotel and talk all these stuff there and do whatever you want," Lu Qiang said with a mischievous smile on his face as he didn't want to let go of any chance to tease Lu Feng.

Lu Feng was aware that Lu Qiang was enjoying seeing him like this. He sighed and said, "If you are enjoying it this much, why don't you join us then? You can hear us talking like this and you can do the stuff with us too, Lu Qiang. Won't it be more fun like this?"

"Well, I have someone to do the stuff with. I am not lacking like both of you," Lu Qiang said as looking at Jiang Yuyan and winked at her to which she replied with a smile that she was still trying to hide as Lu Feng was a bit angry.

"Who said we are lacking?" saying it Jiang Yang looked at Lu Feng and asked, "Are we?"

"Of course not Jiang Yang. Get a girl and prove to him you are not lacking. Be a man," Lu Feng said.

"Yeah! Soon I will show him," Jiang yang said with full confidence.

"Why only Jiang Yang? What about you? Are you lacking?" Asked Lu Qiang smiling mischievously being ready to hear his reply.

"No I am not but for me women are trouble and I prefer to stay away from them," replied Lu Feng.

"So you think I am a trouble to Lu Qiang," hearing him suddenly Jiang Yuyan asked.

"Well, thanks to you I am happy to see him in trouble," Lu Feng replied.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Qiang and asked, "Am I trouble for you?"

"Nope! Even if you are, I would like you to trouble me every time," Lu Qiang replied.

Jiang Yuyan smiled to hear it. She then looked at Lu Feng and said being upset, "But I will stay away from you as I might trouble you, Lu Feng."

"No, you are not a trouble for me. You are d...different," Lu Feng replied with his last words in a low voice.

“How I am different? Am I not a woman?” she asked with a harsh tone as not in a mood to give up to his soft words.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang didn't meddle in between and let them talk as first time Jiang Yuyan was talking to Lu Feng without being hesitant.

Also, they understood the meaning of Lu Feng calling her 'different'. They wanted him to be open as they have accepted his feeling towards Jiang Yuyan which he was trying hard to suppress and they understood how hard it might be for him.

“I know you since we were kids so you are different from the other women around me whom I don't know much,” he replied trying to cover what he said a moment before. Also, he was aware that Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang understood the meaning of the word 'different' but they were being silent about it.

“Really? What do you know about me? and why am I different” she asked straightforwardly, looking into his eyes with full confidence.

Lu Feng gulped to see this confident Jiang Yuyan and looked at Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang who were quiet and enjoying to see Lu Feng being trapped.

“Answer her, what she is asking, Lu Feng,” Lu Qiang said with serious expressions on his face ignoring how awkward was it for Lu Feng.

“This is like my sister. Only she can trap the lion easily like this,” Jiang Yang looked at Lu Feng who looked scared with Jiang Yuyan's sudden question and said, “Answer her, Lu Feng.”

“I just know that you are one adorable girl whom I promised to protect always and I will fulfill that promise till the end of my life,” Lu Feng replied looking in her eyes and his every word sounded genuine and he meant it.

Hearing it other three had nothing to say and kept quiet but Jiang Yuyan spoke to break this silence, “Till the end of your life?”

Lu Feng nodded as saying 'Yes' so she asked again, "What if the woman you will love in future won't like it?"

"There won't be anyone ever," He replied being way too serious while staring in her eyes and he realized how much he loves her.

258 Approval Of Elder Ming..

Jiang Yuyan didn't know what to say seeing him so serious and kept quiet. His intense-looking eyes and the way he was looking at her made her speechless.

Seeing her awkward, Lu Feng immediately averted his sight from her face and stood up to go near the railing of the patio facing his back towards these three.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang looked at each other as not knowing what to do then suddenly Lu Qiang spoke looking at Lu Feng's back, "You are better with Jiang Yang then as there won't be anyone and women are trouble for you."

"Yeah! he deserves my annoying brother only," Jiang Yuyan too joined Lu Qiang.

Lu Feng heard them and said without turning to look at them, "Before that why don't you guys just kill me. It would be better than being with annoyance all the time?"

"Woo-hoo! Who is annoying here. I am a loving, caring and funny person," said Jiang Yang.

"Yes, and that's what makes you annoying sometimes," Jiang Yuyan replied as enjoying to tease her brother while Lu Qiang was looking at Lu Feng who was silent.

Soon few days passed by and Lu corporation released a statement regarding Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan getting engaged and revealed who was the mystery girl with Lu Qiang in that wedding a few days back.

Lu Qiang continued keeping bodyguards with Jiang Yuyan whenever she went to university or somewhere out as he didn't want anyone to trouble her and disturb her peaceful life. Moreover, she was the woman of one powerful person so nobody dared to disturb her in any way.

The engagement was decided to hold on in the next few days as Jiang Yuyan was going to have her first-semester exam next

month and Lu Qiang didn't want any disturbances in her studies.

After her exam, there was going to be a winter vacation but he didn't want to do it in winter so as a result of it he decided to do it before her exams. Moreover, it was Autumn and better than Winter. Jiang Peizhi and Mo Ruolan stayed back in China as they had to prepare for the engagement of their daughter.

Mo Ruolan and Jiang Peizhi personally went to Ming Mansion to visit the elder Ming and to inform him about it even though he was already aware of this since he saw the picture of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan being together, holding each other's hand.

As they reached Ming Mansion, Zhao Jei welcomed them as knowing the reason for their visit. She was happy for Jiang Yuyan because she knew Lu Qiang was the best man any girl could get. Even though both families had bad relations, Lu Qiang's capability and the kind of person he was, that was not hidden to anyone.

Elder Ming was in a living room waiting for them as Ming Ruolan already informed him about their arrival. She was worried about how her uncle will react to it but she knew it would be better to inform him herself.

As they sat on the sofa, elder Lu greeted them and didn't show any sign on his face that he knew why they came to visit him. In a while, once they finish a drink offered by Zhao Jei, Mo Ruolan decided to speak and said, "Uncle! Jiang Yuyan's engagement has been fixed with Lu Qiang."

"Hmm!" That was the only reply she got from elder Lu who was sitting silently waiting for her to speak further which made her feel even more nervous and her heart started to beat faster.

Ming Yuyseng too didn't react to it as his father was silent but he was happy for Jiang Yuyan to know Lu Qiang was a good person.

Zhao Jie sensed this silence and spoke to vanish the awkwardness around, "That's a great news sister Mo Ruolan.

We are happy for her. She then looked at her husband and asked, "Isn't it?"

"Hmm!" Ming Yusheng replied as agreeing to his wife and not wanting to disappoint his cousin and her husband as they were their guests.

Mo Ruolan smiled and waited for her uncle to say something while Jiang Peizhi kept his hand on the backside of her palm to calm her down.

"I too think it is good news as my granddaughter is getting engaged." Finally, the elder Ming spoke and everyone gave out a deep sigh of relief. They waited for him to speak further.

"That boy, Lu Qiang, he would be the best man for our Jiang Yuyan and I am sure she would be happy with him," said elder Ming while looking at Mo Ruolan which made her smile brightly and her heartbeats to calm down.

Others too had a smile on their faces. Mo Ruolan took a deep breath and asked, "Uncle, I wish you to come in the engagement to give her your blessings. Without ur blessings, it won't be complete."

"I said I am happy for her and she had my blessings with her always, so there is no need for me to come there personally." Elder Lu's words were straight forward and no one could ever force him to do what he didn't want.

"I understand uncle," saying it Mo Ruolan kept quite. She had a smile on her face as the approval of her uncle matters a lot for her even though he declined her wish for him to come personally to the engagement ceremony.

Ming Rusheng was standing upstairs, listening to the conversation between elders. He was angry to hear this news though he already got to know it through the news. He didn't expect his grand-father to approve of Lu Qiang and call him the best man for Jiang Yuyan.

Ming Lan too heard them but she handled herself as she already accepted the reality and she was aware of there was no use of feeling bad about it as Lu Qiang can't be in her life ever.

260 Weak In A Love...

“I am always here for you, Ming Rusheng. Now let’s go from here,” Zhang Wei wanted to take Ming Rusheng out from the pub as soon as possible as he couldn’t see him in such a bad condition.

“Let...me drink, uncle. I want to drink today...because...I...am...hurt,” He said while looking at the bottle on the table in front of him.

“I know! I know, my son. That’s why I am here to take you back,” Said Zhang Wei, trying to console him.

“I don’t want to, uncle” saying it, Ming Rusheng again picked up a bottle from the table. When he was about to drink it just then Zhang Wei stopped him by holding the bottle.

Ming Rusheng tried to pull the bottle back but as he was not able to do it, tears started to roll down from his eyes in frustration and he said, “I can’t even drink with peace now.”

Zhang Wei felt hurt to see tears in his eyes as Ming Rusheng was not the kind of person who could cry like this. Since he was a kid, it was the first time when Zhang Wei was watching him crying. Ming Rusheng believed in making others cry instead of crying himself.

Seeing him like this, drunken and crying like a kid, Zhang Wei remembered about himself from the past days when he was as of the same age as Ming Rusheng. He saw himself in Ming Rusheng and strongly felt that he can’t let Ming Rusheng become like him.

Zhang Wei patted his back and said, “I can’t let you be like me. I will fix everything for you.”

Ming Rusheng laughed and said, “Haha! No one can fix anything for me, uncle. No one can.”
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

“I can, my son. Trust me,” Zhang Wei said being determined to help him.

Hearing it, Ming Rusheng looked at his uncle with his teary, red, drunken eyes and asked, “Can you bring Jiang Yuyan to me? Can you make her fall in love with me?” He looked hurt.

Zhang Wei had no word to say in reply to his question but he said, “We can at least try to get her for you.”

“Is it even possible, uncle, when that bastard Lu Qiang is with her?” Ming Rusheng asked with rage in his eyes as he mentioned Lu Qiang.

“I said, we can try but we can’t force her and forget about Lu Qiang,” Zhang Wei said to see how angry Ming Rusheng looked.

“She won’t come to me... I..I know she won’t... Never ever,” saying it he again grabbed the bottle and drank from it.

Zhang Wei pulled out a bottle which made alcohol spill on Ming Rusheng’s clothes. As Ming Rusheng tried to grab it again, Zhang Wei frowned, “Enough now” and asked the waiter to take everything away from the table.

He then looked back at Ming Rusheng and said, “She will. I will make it possible but promise me one thing.”

Ming Rusheng frowned with what his uncle did but hearing his words, he asked, “What uncle?”

“If she won’t listen to you, you will never try to force yourself on her and wait for her,” Zhang Wei said.

Ming Rusheng sighed and leaned back on a couch with his eyes closed and said, “I love her, uncle. How can I harm her?”

“I know you are a good man and just like to act tough in front of others but sometimes we act without thinking the consequences,” Said Zhang Wei, having sad expressions on his face.

“But she can’t see I am a good man. She has eyes only for him,” saying it tears were rolling down from the corners of both eyes.

“She will. Just be patient,” saying it Zhang Wei got up from the couch and asked the manager to provide help to get Ming Rusheng out towards his car.

Zhang Wei decided to take Ming Rusheng to his home instead of Ming Mansion as he didn't want elder Ming to see him in such bad condition. In a car, on the way to Zhang Wei's residence, Ming Rusheng was continuously mumbling Jiang Yuyan's name with tears rolling down from his eyes nonstop.

Once they reach Zhang Wei's residence, he took Ming Rusheng to the room with the help of his driver. The room, which was specially meant for Ming Rusheng. Zhang Wei never got married so he was alone. He treated Ming Rusheng as his son and when Ming Rusheng was a kid he used to spend most of his time with his uncle. For Zhang Wei, he was the medicine for his loneliness.

Zhang Wei took him to his bedroom and made him sleep comfortably in a bed. He removed Ming Rusheng's shoes and sat beside Ming Rusheng to pat Ming Rusheng's head as feeling bad for him and said, “You won't be like me, Ming Rusheng. I promise you, you will get everything that you desired for.”

Saying it he turned around, switched off all the lights except for the night lamp and left the room.

Leaving Ming Rusheng's room, Zhang Wei went to his bedroom. He straight went to his wardrobe and pulled out one old photo album from the drawer inside. Carrying the album with him, he went to his bed. Sitting on a bed, he opened the album and started to go through all the pictures one by one observing each of them till his heart's content with a painful smile on his face.

As he was going through the pictures; tears rolled down from his eyes and said, “I miss you, Ming Fangsu. Why did you leave me?”

The whole album was filled with pictures of only Ming Fangsu since she was a teenager girl to a grown-up woman. A pretty girl with a bright smile on her face, a smile that can melt

anyone's heart. That album had all the beautiful moments in her life captured in it.

Zhang Wei, a strong man looked weak when he was going through her pictures with tears rolling down from his eyes. Soon that silent crying converted into a loud one and he lied in a bed, crying and holding that album close to his chest.

261 I Won't Call Her Sister-In-Law..

A day before engagement...

The Lu Mansion was filled with the guests. The Wang family arrived to attend it and again the atmosphere in the Lu Mansion was similar to the day before elder Lu's wedding anniversary, pleasant and full of excitement.

After dinner when all were sitting in a garden and they were talking to each other, Lu Lijun was sitting on a bench under the tree, away from everyone. Lu Qiang came out and saw Lu Lijun was sitting alone. He went to him and sat beside him on the bench.

"Why are you sitting here like Lu Feng?" Lu Qiang asked as it was the favorite place of Lu Feng in the whole garden.

"Nothing just wanted to be alone for some time," He replied with serious expressions on his face which made Lu Qiang wonder what might have happened to him but before Lu Qiang could ask him anything further, Lu Lijun spoke again, "You know our sisters, they are talking too much today and it's annoying for me. Look at them," He said while signaling Lu Qiang to look at Lu daughters who were talking to Wang Shu and were laughing loudly.

"You are right. Our sisters are annoying sometimes," said Lu Feng who was standing behind Lu Lijun.

"Brother Lu Feng! When did you come?" Lu Lijun asked, being happy to see Lu Feng.

"Just when you were complaining about our sisters," Lu Feng replied and sat beside Lu Lijun. Lijun was sitting in between his favorite brothers. Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang as asking him what happened. to which Lu Qiang shook his head as saying nothing. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

“Isn’t it the same atmospheres as it was a night before grandma and grandpa’s wedding anniversary?” Lu Lijun asked to look at other family members sitting opposite them at a distance.

“Hmm!” Lu Qiang and Lu Feng replied at the same time.

“And tomorrow is Lu Qiang’s engagement so all are excited even more than the last time,” said Lu Feng while looking in the same direction as Lu Lijun.

“So from tomorrow, do we have to call Yuyan as a sister-in-law?” Lu Lijun asked to look at Lu Feng to which he startled as he didn’t think about it.

“Call her what both of you like. No need to be so formal,” Lu Qiang said while looking in the direction of other family members. He then looked at Lu Feng and said, “Since we were kids, you call her Yuyan and I am sure she and everyone in the family would be fine with you calling her by a name, Yuyan.”

Lu Feng nodded to what he said, just then Lu Lijun spoke again, “I am not going to call her sister-in-law. Yuyan sounds better.”

Lu Qiang patted his head and said, “Call her the way you are comfortable with.”

They were sitting silently and suddenly Lu Lijun said, “Elder brother! Last time when I was unhappy with the thought of you getting married and to convince me you said that she would be a nice person and the one who will love and care for me just as you do. Remember?”

Lu Qiang nodded to hear it and said, “Yes, I remember.”

“She is really a nice person,” Lu Lijun said again which brought smiles to Lu Qiang and Lu Feng’s faces. It was good news for them as Lu Lijun never thought about anyone in this way other than his two favorite brothers.

They were aware that Lu Lijun had accepted her in their lives but expressing it by saying ‘she is a nice person’ was a relief for them and they were sure about his acceptance towards Jiang Yuyan.

“She is, Lu Lijun,” Lu Qiang and Lu Feng replied at the same time having smiles on their faces.

“So, as I promised, I will love and care for her always from now on,” Lu Lijun said again.

“You should. She needs lots of love and care from all of us,” Said Lu Qiang.

Lu Lijun then looked at Lu Feng and asked, “Brother Lu Feng, You will do the same, right?”

Lu Feng felt a bit awkward and said, “We all will care for her, Lu Lijun. She is now a part of our family.”

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng and assured him through eyes that it's fine and he didn't need to feel awkward like this to which Lu Feng nodded as saying ‘Okay’.

In Jiang residence...

Just as Lu Family, Jiang's were having a good time too by discussing a few things and teasing Jiang Yuyan along whenever they got a chance. On the dining table during dinner, Jiang Yang was looking at Jiang Yuyan who was eating slowly and said, “Eat properly little sis. Tomorrow is an important day for you. If you won't eat properly, I won't be surprised to see you fainting and falling on the floor.”

“I am not that weak,” she said while still going through the food and thinking what to eat.

“Yeah I saw that when you dealt with those three guys as easily as they were garbage and you were putting them in a dustbin,” said Jiang Yang reminding her about what happened on the day of their mini trip with Lu brothers.

Their parents were shocked to hear it and looked at their kids but before they could ask anything something happened and they kept silent.

Putting the chopsticks in her hands on a dining table with the ‘Thud’ sound, she looked at her brother with cold expressions on her face with her bright-looking eyes turned into a dark one and said, “Even the garbage is better than those kinds of men.”

Seeing the same threatening darkness in her eyes, Jiang Yang kept silent for a while and his parents did the same. They were aware of this side of their daughter which could be dangerous and she somehow managed to control it to some extent. They left it to Jiang Yang as only he knew how to handle her whenever she was angry.

262 Keep Awake? The Whole Night?

Seeing the same threatening darkness in her eyes, Jiang Yang kept silent for a while and his parents did the same. They were aware of this side of their daughter which could be dangerous and she somehow managed to control it to some extent. They left it to Jiang Yang as only he knew how to handle her whenever she was angry.

“I know, little sis and you did well at that moment,” said Jiang Yang to calm her down but she was still the same staring at him, so he smiled and asked, “Do you want Lu Qiang to torture me to death?”

Upon hearing Lu Qiang’s name, the darkness in her eyes started to disappear and she finally reacted, “Huh?”

“If he will come to know that you are not eating properly, he will blame me saying I couldn’t take care of you and might torture me. Your man is dangerous, you know?”

These words from Jiang yang diverted her from that incident to the topic of Lu Qiang and she said, “No he is not. He is a very kind and best person I have ever come across.”

“Yeah, now your brother doesn’t stand anywhere for you. You hurt me now,” he said making an upset face.

“Don’t do over-acting brother. You know well, what space you hold in my life and no one can ever replace it,” she replied as picking up one meat piece in her chopstick and held it in front of his mouth. Jiang Yang smiled and ate it.

Jiang Yang did the same and offered her a piece of meat, but before she could eat it, he retreated his hand and ate that piece while Jiang Yuyan’s mouth was still opened. She frowned and said, “This is what I hate about you, brother. One moment you seem like an angel and the other moment you act like a devil.”

“Ohh! My cute sister is angry. Take this,” saying it he offered her another piece of meat but she shook her head as saying ‘No’ but just when he was about to retreat his hand, she grabbed it and ate the piece of meat and smiled while chewing it. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

Seeing their kids, the parents too had a smile on their faces forgetting about the still had to know about what happened that day.

The next day was going to be a special day for Lu Qiang as he was going to be officially engaged with Jiang Yuyan and the whole world will know about it. After dinner, before going to the bed, Lu Qiang missed Jiang Yuyan to look at the empty bed and thought to call her. He immediately dialed her number and waited for her to receive it with a smile on his face.

Jiang Yuyan was in her bedroom, being ready to sleep and she thought to call Lu Qiang but before she could do it, her cell phone rang. She had a wide smile on her face to see Lu Qiang’s contact number flashing on her mobile screen. She received it without wasting a single moment and said excitedly, “I was about to call you.”

Lu Qiang had a pleasant smile on his face to hear her excited voice and said “Ohh! Looks like you are missing me as much as I am missing you right now.”

“Isn’t it obvious?” she asked with the same pleasant smile on her face just like him.

“Hmm! So do you want me to come there and won’t let you miss me this much?” he asked to tease her.

“Can you?” she asked boldly.

“Are you asking me or challenging me?” he asked.

“Both,” she replied confidently.

“Looks like, you are not scared anymore. Keep your room’s door open for me then,” he said

“It’s always open for you,” she again replied boldly.

“Wait for me then,” He said but before she could continue their interesting conversation to mock each other, the cell phone in her hand was taken away which startled her.

That was none other than Jiang Yang. He knocked on the door but Jiang Yuyan was too much busy with her man that she didn't reply even after hearing it and forgot someone knocked on the door.

Getting no reply from inside, Jiang Yang entered the room and heard what she was talking with Lu Qiang. He decided to tease both lovebirds who were missing each other and took out the cellphone from her hand.

“Brother, w.....?”

“Shhh!” Jiang Yang silenced her and held the cellphone to his ear to hear what Lu Qiang was saying.

“If I keep you awake whole night then don't blame me,” said Lu Qiang being unaware of who was on the other side of the line.

“Keep awake? The whole night? Ohh! I don't mind though if you are missing me that badly,” Jiang Yang spoke which surprised Lu Qiang but he got back to his senses and replied, “I was talking about keeping your sister awake the whole night as it's hard for me to hold back now.”

“Wowowo! Hold on, man. Do you want my sister to have eye bags on her engagement day and look like a zombie by keeping her awake the night before her engagement?”

“Even if she will have eye bags, she would be the prettiest girl,” replied Lu Qiang.

“That I know but still this brother won't approve it. Wait to see her till tomorrow,” said Jiang Yang.

“Ohkay! But only for her sake.”

They cut the call and Jiang Yang looked at his sister, “He won't come.”

“Hmm!” she nodded as she already understood it from what her brother said.

Jiang Yang put the cell phone aside and asked, “Are you upset that he won’t come.”

“No it’s fine as it would be late and I don’t him to travel this far at late night,” she replied and seems fine with it.

“That’s like my good sister.” He then stepped towards her and held her face in his hands and made her look at him and said, “I hope this angry bird is way too much happy now.”

263 Why Are You Here?

Jiang Yang held Jiang Yuyan's face in his hands to make her look at him and said, "I hope this angry bird is happy now."

"I am brother," Jiang Yuyan replied while looking into her brother's eyes with pleasant expressions on her face.

"I am happy for you too," he said and kissed on her forehead.

She had a smile on her face and brightness in her eyes showing her happiness and said, "I know. You are the happiest person, even more than me and Lu Qiang."

Patting her head he said, "Hmm! Sometimes you talk really well."

"I always do it's just that you keep annoying me."

"Haha! And I won't stop it ever."

"I don't want you to stop, brother."

Seeing her happy and cheerful just like she was in her childhood days, Jiang Yang felt emotional as he waited for this day to come for long. He hugged her and said, "Suddenly, I am feeling like you are a grown-up woman and not my little sis Yuyan anymore. It took me time to realize it."

Jiang Yuyan too hugged her brother tightly and said, "I want to be your little sister Yuyan, forever."

"You are and you will always be." Saying it Jiang Yang's eyes were moist and his voice was heavy as she was a daughter for him instead of a sister and everything that can bring happiness in her life was the best thing for him. He never imagined that he would be able to see this day so soon and his sister would be this much happy so he was being emotional to see it.

Jiang Yuyan too understood what does all these new things in her life meant for her brother as he sacrificed a lot just for her sake.

Day of engagement..

Lu Mansion and Jiang's residence were in a spirit of celebration. The engagement was in the evening but all were excited since morning.

After breakfast in the living room of Jiang residence..

“Jiang Yuyan! You have to go to the beauty salon today where I have already booked an appointment for you,” said Mo Ruolan while going through the list of stuff to prepare for the evening, sitting on the sofa.

“What's the need, mom? I am fine like this,” Jiang Yuyan replied being lazy to go there.

Mo Ruolan kept the stuff in her hand down then looked at her daughter with serious expressions and said with a firm voice, “I know you don't need it but it's not any normal day. It's your engagement today so don't say No.”

“Mom...!” Jiang Yuyan tried to say No again but before she could say anything further, she had to stop in front of her sweet but sometimes bossy mother.

“I am not going to listen to anything so get ready to go there,” Mo Ruolan said as ordering her and left the living room to do other things in the home.

With a sad face, Jiang Yuyan nodded as saying Yes. Seeing her sad, Jiang Yang who was sitting beside his sister, smiled and said, “Mom is the person you can't say No as sometimes she is very dangerous like a Hitler you know.

“Yeah, Really!” said Jiang Yuyan still being not wanting to go out.

Jiang Yang stood up from the sofa and said, “Let's go, she has already instructed me to take you there.”

“Hmm!” Jiang Yuyan gave out a deep sigh and stood up to go with her brother.

Both reached to one of the most luxurious beauty salon and spa in the city. Jiang Yang took her inside and left her to attendants there and said he will come back to get her once she is done.

After spending hours while going through grooming things in beauty salon and spa, Jiang Yang was relaxing in her VIP private room wearing a silver color satin gown from the salon, long up to half of her thighs and tied at her waist. She was sitting on a couch with her eyes closed waiting for the attendant to do final things.

Soon the door opened and someone entered inside the room. Jiang Yuyan thought it must be the attendant but soon she realized she was wrong when she smelled familiar cologne and felt someone was standing in front of her. She opened her eyes but before she could say a single word her mouth got sealed with someone's warm and soft lips. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

The man leaned on her with his one hand resting on the hand rest of the couch while the other one was resting on headrest on her either side. She calmed down and let him kiss her realizing that's none other than her man. Leaving her gasping for the air, soon he parted away and sat beside her on a couch.

Jiang Yuyan caught enough oxygen and asked, "Why are you here and how they allowed you to enter inside?" she asked with her eyes closed to gather herself from the intimacy she felt a moment before.

"You are forgetting who I am?" replied Lu Qiang while straightening his suits jacket.

"Hmm! I forget it all the time as for me you only Lu Qiang, not the President Lu," she said to look at him.

"Well! You and I are the known couple in the whole city. Also, this place belongs to one of my friend whom I helped to start this business."

Hearing it she said with a teasing smile on her face, "Ohh so my man is generous too."

"Not for everyone but to the people who are really worth it," He replied.

She realized, she was yet to get the answer to her main question and asked again, "What are you doing here?"

Lu Qiang turned to look at her and replied while running his fingers along her Jawline, "I came to get you.

"Brother Yang said he will come," she said as not being affected by his touch.

He moved his sight and his fingers from her jawline to her neck and said calmly while still staring at where ever he was running his fingers "Do you want me to go back?"

264 In A Bed, In A Pain And....

Lu Qiang moved his sight and his fingers from her jawline to her neck and said calmly while still staring at where ever he was running his fingers “Do you want me to go back?”

“No! I mean he was about to come so...”

“I decided to give him a break from you as I missed you.”
Saying it he looked into her eyes intensely and hovered over her again on a couch. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

Jiang Yuyan placed both of her hands on his chest to stop him from coming closer to her and said, “Wait! Attendant might be coming any time soon.”

“Don’t underestimate me this much, love. When I am here, no would dare to come inside,” Lu Qiang said and sealed her lips and didn’t give her a chance to talk again.

It didn’t take time for them to lie comfortably on a couch by changing their positions from sitting to sleeping one. Lu Qiang moved his hand to the back of her waist and lift her up in a swift move to make her lie down and to be on top of her.

He parted away from her lips to look into her eyes and said in his hoarse voice, “You are so fresh and smelling so good that I am feeling like to take you right here at this moment.”

Jiang Yuyan gulped to hear it and said, “Then, I..I won’t be able to attend our engagement.”

Lu Qiang gave out a deep sigh and said, “hmm! I know, so I have to control for now but I can do at least something that won’t stop you from attending the engagement.”

“What?” Jiang Yuyan asked with scared expressions on her face to make sure if he meant what exactly she thought about hearing his words.

“I want to taste you,” saying it Lu Qiang slipped his hands under her gown from below and moved it from her thighs to her waist.

Jiang Yuyan held his hand and exclaimed, “No, stop!”

Lu Qiang looked in her eyes and said with one corner of his lips curved upward, “This room is soundproof.”

Jiang Yuyan had nothing to say and Lu Qiang started to move his hand in between her thighs. When he was about to reach the place where he wanted to be, she said, “I am starving. I need food.”

Lu Qiang retreated his hand immediately and asked to look into her eyes, “You haven’t eaten anything?”

“I did but I am hungry again after these tiring beauty treatments. I was bored and now I am hungry,” She replied with sad expressions on his face which showed how much she was starving.

Lu Qiang moved back and made her sit. He instructed the attendant to finish whatever is there as fast as she could and took Jiang Yuyan out for a lunch to one expensive hotel which had a VIP private rooms in its restaurant. He ordered food and as soon as it arrived, Jiang Yuyan started to dig in it as she was starving for ages.

Lu Qiang was looking at her. Noticing it, she asked, “Why aren’t you eating?”

Hearing her he picked up chopsticks and started to eat.

Lu Qiang was while smiling to see how focused she was on food and he asked, “What exactly they have done to you that you are this much hungry?”

Chewing and swallowing the food in her mouth she replied, “Nothing much but it was so boring and when I am bored to death I get hungry as I waste all my energy to handle that boredom.”

Lu Qiang smiled to hear her unique reply and said, “I used to think girls like all these things and they can give all the time in the world to be in salons and spas.”

“Hmm! That’s true but it’s not my cup of tea instead I would like to do something productive,” She said still being immersed in food like a cute squirrel not bothering to look at him.

“I see but I came there so that we can do something productive but you stopped me,” he said to tease her but there was no use as she couldn’t see or sense anything other than the delirious food in front of her.

Jiang Yuyan swallowed the food in her mouth and said, “I mean! I would have paint. That’s the best thing to do for me.”

“You have yet to experience other best things that’s why you are saying it,” He said again.

Hearing it she finally looked at him and asked curiously, “Other things?”

“The things, we haven’t done yet,” Lu Qiang replied and she looked at him with puzzled expressions to know what exactly he meant.

Seeing her still not getting it, he said while staring in her eyes, “You and me in a bed and you are in a pain and

Her eyes were opened widely to hear it and she wanted him to stop. “Cough-Cough! I..I got it.”

He passed her water as she was coughing. Jiang Yuyan drank it and didn’t look at him. Seeing her flustered he didn’t want to leave the chance to tease her and said, “So, what do you think about it? Isn’t it the best thing to do, pain with pleasure.”

She didn’t know what to say so she found her excuse in food and said, “L..let me eat!”

Lu Qiang stopped teasing her and let her eat. Once they finished it Lu Qiang took her to the hotel room which he had booked in the same hotel as to let her relax after lunch.

When they reached inside the room she asked, “Why we came here?”

Lu Qiang held her hand, took her to the bed. He made her sit on the edge of the bed and said, “Soon we have to go to An Tian and before that I want you to rest as you must be tired

with all the things you have gone through since morning. I don't want you to feel tired during our engagement ceremony.”

265 World's Cutest Cow..

Lu Qiang held her hand, took her to the bed. He made her sit on the edge of the bed and said, "Soon we have to go to An Tian and before that I want you to rest as you must be tired with all the things you have gone through since morning. I don't want you to feel tired during our engagement ceremony."

She lifted her head up to look at him and said with a smile, "How thoughtful you are. Sometime before someone had a full plan to make feel tired and now suddenly...."

"I still have that plan in mind. If you are fine I can apply it right at the moment," Lu Qiang said stopping her in between and leaning down towards her.

"I was teasing you," saying it she leaned back in a bed as he was getting closer and she stopped with support of her hands, resting on a mattress.

Leaning down towards her even more and resting his hands in a mattress he said looking at her, "Looks like the food you ate earlier is giving you the energy to be bold in front of me."

Pointing towards her stomach with her eyes she said, "No it's yet to digest see my tummy."

"Haha!" Seeing her acting like a kid and her tiny round stomach which was full of tons of food she ate earlier Lu Qiang couldn't help but laugh and he moved back from her.

As he moved back, Jiang Yuyan sat up straight on the edge of the bed and asked, "What? Why are you laughing?"

Having a wide smile on his face he replied, "Sometimes you are too innocent. The way you showed me your stomach it....."

"Ohh! Sh*t!" Before Lu Qiang could complete his line, Jiang Yuyan exclaimed to notice something.

"What happened?" he asked.

She looked at him and then to her stomach and said with a worried expression on her face, “See my tummy. It’s a bit round and if my evening gown is tight, then that’s going show it like this and my mother will confront me for sure. She asked me to eat properly and I ate like a cow.”

Hearing the word cow, Lu Qiang who was already smiling to see his innocent Yuyan, laughed even louder.

Seeing him laughing, she frowned and said, “You are laughing again when I am stressing out here?”

“What can I do when world’s cutest cow is in front of me and crying for eating too much?” he said while controlling his laughter but after saying it he couldn’t hold it back and laughed again

“You.....” Jiang Yuyan wanted to say something but stopped seeing him laughing like this for the first time and continued staring at him. Lu Qiang’s eyes were teary to laugh this much and he suddenly noticed her staring at him.

He stopped laughing and asked, “What?”

Jiang Yuyan stood up from the bed and stepped towards him to stand close in front of him. Before he could understand anything she pecked on his lips while tiptoeing. She looked into his eyes but said, “Nothing” and hugged him in the next moment.

Lu Qiang hugged her back and asked, “What happened?”

Burying her head in his chest Jiang Yuyan replied, “Promise me one thing?”

“What?” he asked.

“That you will always laugh like this,” she replied holding him even tighter.

“Huh?” Lu Qiang didn’t get why she was suddenly saying it as the moment before she was worried about her round stomach.

Jiang Yuyan moved her head back to look at him and said, “You don’t know how nice it felt to see you laughing like this and I want to see you like this always.”

“Hmm! As you say,” he said with a smile on his face and continued staring in her pretty eyes.

“Actually, you look very cute when you laugh.” She said and pinched his cheek lightly.

He was surprised to hear her calling him cute and said, “Cute? I am a man who is like an iceberg. I remember someone calling me like it.”

“You are a cute iceberg,” She said and pecked on his lips again.

“Okay, I will take it.” Saying it Lu Qiang asked her to rest.

After resting for sometimes, both left to An Tian’s designer showroom. When they reached there, An Tian personally welcomed them and just as last time the whole place was empty with only a few assistants of An Tian being ready to attend Jiang Yuyan.

“Welcome Mr. and Mrs. Lu Qiang!” An Tian said and asked them to have a seat on the luxurious circular white leathered sofa.

Hearing him calling them as Mr. and Mrs. Lu Qiang, Jiang Yuyan smiled while Lu Qiang said, “Your brain and your tongue is working really fine these days.”

“Ohh, Really? Thank you for the compliment, President Lu,” An Tian replied and all three sat on the couch. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

After chatting for a while An Tian sent Jiang Yuyan with his assistants to get ready and he stayed back with Lu Qiang.

Seeing her entering the room inside, Lu Qiang looked at An Tian and said, “I hope this time you haven’t made her dress difficult to unzip it.”

Beautiful things are meant to be difficult my friend. Look at your woman, beautiful from the outside but something difficult hidden inside. Isn’t it interesting?”

Hearing it, Lu Qiang looked at him with shocked gaze and before he could say anything An Tian spoke again, “I am not

saying it in a wrong way. Trust me, I know she is a very nice woman to be with but in her eyes, I could sense she has something hidden and that might be something painful for her.”

Lu Qiang didn't know what to answer him and stayed silent. Seeing him silent An Tian smiled and said, “You know well that once I was one of the best psychiatrists in the city just before I found my passion in dress designing so it's not hard for me to know about the person with whom I spend just a little amount of time.”

266 Most Beautiful Woman In The World..

Lu Qiang didn't know what to answer him and stayed silent. Seeing him silent An Tian smiled and said, "You know well, once I was one of the best psychiatrists in the city just before I found my passion in fashion designing so it's not hard for me to know about the person with whom I spend just a little amount of time."

"Hmm! I know!" Lu Qiang replied.

"And the reason we met was my previous profession and Lu Lijun?"

"Hmm!" Lu Qiang nodded being silent about Jiang Yuyan and Li Lijun. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

An Tian understood his silence and said to change the topic, "Okay, let's go and dress you up first." Saying it, An Tian said and stood up from the couch and Lu Qiang followed him.

Lu Qiang came out of the dresser room soon being ready in his brand new tuxedo which is meant for the special day of his life. He looked handsome as usual with his hair set neatly. He had that royal aura around him always which made him look even more impressive.

On the way, back to the couch, An Tian said, "Whenever I see you in the suit designed by me I feel like it was worth to become a fashion designer from a psychiatrist."

"Well, I think so too. You are at least good at something," Lu Qiang replied as sitting on the couch.

"Hmm! Here goes the savage President Lu. Let me check out your woman. I am sure this time too you would feel short for breath and I am going to charge you double." Saying it, he went towards the dresser room where Jiang Yuan went.

Time passed by but no one came out of the room and Lu Qiang was waiting for them eagerly. Lu Qiang's patience was wearing off and he stood up from the couch. Just then An Tian came out of the room and he asked Lu Qiang to look at the huge red curtain on his right side which was covering that place from ceiling to the floor.

Lu Qiang did as An Tian said and in a moment that red satin curtain parted in two sides to show what was behind it.

When Lu Qiang saw what was there, the exact thing happened that An Tian said before going to check on Jiang Yuyan. Lu Qiang couldn't move his sight from Jiang Yuyan who was standing there in a red color dress.

Lu Qiang started to observe her from head to toe carefully to capture everything in his eyes. It was a tube top, dual-tone, wine red satin evening dress in which her fair and slender neck along with her beautifully exposed shoulders looked amazingly seductive that Lu Qiang was immersed in observing them.

The dress had a tiny black color embroidered flowers on top till her waist. It was long enough to touch the floor even if she was wearing heels. The front bottom side of the dress was just touching to the ground while the back bottom side was long like a hem and it could follow her wherever she will move. A Wine Red satin covered in a soft red transparent cloth that had a tinge of black somewhere to give it a shadow look.

Her deep golden brown hair was tied in a loose bun with hair parted in mid and front hair strands pulled back loosely to towards the bun with few hair strands left hanging till her neck. There were tiny red flowers fixed somewhere in the hair which made her look like a princess.

She was wearing a light makeup with wine red color lipstick which made her lips look like a cherry and Lu Qiang wanted to taste them at the very moment.

Her starry and bright looking eyes looked seductively beautiful with her long and dense eyelashes. The upper eyelid had the red and black color eye shadows on it to make them look smoking hot.

She had no jewelry around her neck as her fair, delicate and radiant skin needed nothing else to make it look pretty and just had tiny, red, flower-shaped earrings in her ears.

In the left hand, she was wearing a bracelet with red and black combination with the same tiny flowers on it. The part of the bracelet was hanging like tiny chains while on the other hand, she had nothing. The red nail polish on her delicate fingers was highlighting as good as jewelry that she needed nothing more.

Lu Qiang had the same black-red combination suit but in the opposite way. His suit was black with a thin and almost invisible outline of red on the edges. The suit had tiny red embroidered flowers on the one corner of his pocket with a red satin handkerchief tucked in it.

Lu Qiang's gaze was still fixed on her as it was not enough for him even if he stood there observing her for the whole night. Jiang Yuyan was feeling nervous to see him looking at her like this as he was in a daze. An Tian stood beside Lu Qiang and said, "So is it double?"

"A signed blank cheque," Lu Qiang replied while still looking at her.

"Wohoo! Seems like this creation of mine is going to make me rich," saying it An Tian signaled his assistants to bring Jiang Yuyan towards them. Assistants helped Jiang Yuyan by helping her by handling the dress hem on the backside.

As Jiang Yuyan reached in front of Lu Qiang she looked in his eyes which were filled with a love for her and suddenly An Tian spoke, "Don't kiss her this time as her lip gloss is darker and it would be trouble to clear a mess created by you."

Lu Qiang didn't react to what An Tian said. He held Jiang Yuyan by her shoulders gently to kiss her on the forehead lightly and said with a soft voice with love and admiration for his woman in his eyes, "You are the most beautiful woman in this world."

267 Both Found Their Happiness...

Lu Qiang held Jiang Yuyan by her shoulders gently to kiss her on the forehead and said, “You are the most beautiful woman in this world.”

Jiang Yuyan didn't say anything as not knowing what to say and accepted his complement by reciprocating it with pleasant a smile on her face.

Lu Qiang offered her his hand and asked, “Shall we go?”

She nodded as saying Yes. Lu Qiang then looked at An Tian and said, “See you in the ceremony but come like a human not like an animal” and left with Jiang Yuyan without giving An Tian a chance to say anything.

Hearing what Lu Qiang said, An Tian was shocked while his assistants were smiling. An Tian looked at himself in the mirror that was on the opposite wall in front of him and noticed, he needed a hair cut and a shaving too. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

Turning around to look at retreating back of Lu Qiang he said loudly, “President Lu, I am looking like an animal because of the short notice of few days to prepare the dresses for today's event and that notice was given by you.”

Lu Qiang didn't react and continued walking so An Tian said again, “Did you hear m, president Lu?” Still there was no reply from Lu Qiang and he walked away with a smile on his face to see his friend shouting like crazy.

An Tian was one of Lu Qiang's good friends. Other than Lu Feng and Jiang Yang, Lu Qiang had hardly any friend and those could be counted on fingers.

An Tian was in his late thirties and a bit older to Lu Qiang but they used to along well. A tall and handsome man with blue

eyes, golden hair and white skin, who had European look rather than the Asian as his mother was from.

Lu Qiang met An Tian a few years back regarding Lu Lijun when he was working with doctor Zhang who was helping Lu Qiang with Lu Lijun's matter.

An Tian was one of the best psychiatrist at that time but soon he found his passion in fashion designing and left his previous profession. Till then Lu Qiang was his good friend as An Tian helped him with the matter of Lu Lijun even more than one doctor could help him with. He treated Lu Lijun like his younger brother too.

At the engagement ceremony venue, all the family members, guests, and the media people were present, waiting for a couple of the day to arrive. Soon a black Maybach arrived and all the cameras focused in its direction as to know the most awaited couple was there.

A man from a security team opened the door of the car for Lu Qiang and he stepped out of the car. He was looking exceptionally handsome in his black suit which was combined with a tinge of red color.

Soon the flashlights and sounds of cameras could be heard. Ignoring them Lu Qiang stepped towards the back passenger seat door of the car on the other side where another security guard already opened the door for him.

Lu Qiang offered his hand to Jiang Yuyan and she accepted it. Fair and beautiful feet in a black high heel sandal that too had tiny red flowers on it, could be seen stepping out of the car followed by the other one. Jiang Yuyan came out of the car and everyone present there was amazed by her beauty and couldn't help but praise her.

Holding her hand, Lu Qiang looked into her eyes with love in them and asked, "Ready?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded though she was nervous from inside.

Lu Qiang took her towards the entrance of the venue while holding her hand and started to walk on the steps directing towards the celebration hall. Two lady hosts at the venue from

event Management Company came to Jiang Yuyan to help her with the hem of her dress to make her walk without worry. Both stepped ahead with smiles on their faces making their way through the bright lights from the camera flash.

Every camera person was trying to capture the best shot in their cameras. When both reached inside, everyone present there was looking at the entrance to get a glimpse of this lovely couple as the MC already informed them about their arrival. They looked like mesmerized to look at the couple and soon red flower petals started to shower on them till they walked towards the stage.

More than Lu Qiang all were curious to see and know about Jiang Yuyan and when they saw her with Lu Qiang, she didn't disappoint them as all were mesmerized with this royal beauty with one royal man. She was going to be a Mrs. Lu Qiang and the Queen of Lu Corporation so ultimately she was attracting more attention. Everyone wanted to talk and introduce themselves to her and all the ladies present there would want to be in her list of a friend.

Jiang Yuyan was feeling nervous with this attention as she didn't know what it was meant being Mrs. Lu Qiang. Though she knew Lu Qiang is the best and most reputed businessman, she didn't know what kind of importance she held in everyone's eyes. She knew only one thing that she was with the man she loved a lot and being able to be with him was the only thing she would ever wish for.

All the family members from both families were mesmerized and happy to see them too.

Elder Lu had a wide smile on his face and said to his wife, "I am happy to see my dream come true."

"I am happy for you and my grandson too," Zhao Shuang replied with the smile on her happily aged wrinkled face.

"Finally, my son found his happiness," said Ning Jiahui being able to see through her son and his happiness though he looked calm instead of looking excited.

“Both found their happiness, it’s not just our son,” Lu Jinhai said as he was aware of how big turn was it in the lives of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan. Finally, he was able to see his son happy and Jiang Yuyan out of her traumatized past. He was happy as much as his friend Jiang Peizhi was.

268 Happy and Emotional...

Lu Chen was happy but Su Hui was having a long face and fake smile on her face. Their elder son Lu Han and his wife Qin Xiu were happy too. Standing beside her mother-in-law, Qin Xiu noticed her sad face and said in a low voice that only Su Hui could hear her, “Don’t think too much mother. Everything would be fine.”

“Nothing is going to be fine. Soon you will see all of us would be sidelined by them,” Su Hui said in a low voice but her son Lu Han heard her as he was standing just beside them. He looked at his wife and signaled her asking what happened but Qin Xiu shook her head with a smile on her face as saying and assuring him ‘Nothing’.

Lu Han looked at his mother and noticed she was sad but he didn’t prefer to ask anything at the moment and kept quiet.

Wang Zhilan and her husband were standing near the elder Lu. Wang Zhilan went to her father and said, “Congratulations on becoming a happiest grand-father-in-law in this world.”

Elder Lu laughed to hear it and said, “Haha! I will accept it as I am really very happy.”

Wang Zhilan was aware of most things in Lu Mansion even if she was staying in a different city. She was aware of all the wishes of her father and she too wished the same.

Lu Bao, Lu Lian, and Wang Shu were standing together. Seeing Jiang Yuyan they had those jaw-dropping expressions on their faces. They were used to see their brother looking handsome always but when they saw Jiang Yuyan they couldn’t hold their jaw from dropping down.

“I didn’t know that since the past few months we had one princess in our home,” Said Lu Bao after coming back to her senses, still staring at Jiang Yuyan.

Nodding in agreement to what Lu Bao said, Lu Liang spoke, looking in the same direction as Lu Bao “Hmm! Same

thought. She is a princess.”

“No wonder our rock heart brother melted for this beauty.”
Said Wang Shu said looking in the same direction too.

Seeing Jiang Yuyan, Jiang Peizhi, and Mo Ruolan, both were happy and the emotional at the same time. They had wide smiles on their faces but their eyes were moist too. Jiang Yang noticed his mother and gave her a side a hug by placing his hand around her shoulder and said, “Control, Mrs. Jiang Peizhi. It’s a day for you to feel happy so don’t start crying.”

Mo Ruolan controlled herself from crying and said, “I am not crying. I am just way too happy for her.”

“I know, Mom and we all are happy for both of them,” said Jiang Yang.

Lu Feng and Lu Lijun were standing there too. This time, instead of being mesmerized by her beauty, Lu Feng had a smile on his face to see Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan together as he already accepted this fact. Lu Lijun too looked happy to see Jiang Yuyan with his brother and said, “I didn’t know she is this much pretty.”

Hearing him Lu Feng and Jiang Yang smiled. Lu Feng patted his head and Jiang Yang said, “You have good eyes Lu Lijun. My sister is really pretty.”

Agreeing to Jiang Yang, Lu Lijun said again, “Hmm! She is. When other girls look like witches in such dresses and makeup, Yuyan is looking pretty as a fairy tale princess.”

“I think, now you are becoming more of a man from a kid that you can see the real beauty,” Jiang Yang said and winked at Lu Lijun to which he replied with a smile. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

“Keep your assumptions with you Jiang Yang and don’t try to spoil my brother. Let him be a kid.” Lu Feng said with serious expressions on his face. Seeing him serious, Jiang Yang preferred to kept silent as he knew Lu Feng is actually serious when he talked like this. Lu Lijun too obeyed his brother and kept silent.

Assistant Xiao Min was there too with his father, Xiao-Dong who was Lu Jinhai's assistant. Xiao Min was happy for his boss too. He knew, how much of hardship his boss had gone through and almost felt emotional to remember it.

His father Xiao Dong smiled to see it and patted his back whispering in his ear, "Control yourself, son. You are looking like a father who is sending away his daughter with a man."

Xiao Min smiled as not knowing how to reply to his father and kept silent but his father's words brought a smile on his face.

Before going to the stage, a couple went to their family where everyone praised them and expressed their happiness.

In a while, the couple was on the stage as MC invited them. Reaching the stage Lu Qiang let go of her hand. Jiang Yuyan looked in front and saw all the guests standing in the hall were looking at them.

Suddenly this hall looked like a gigantic place to her. The huge luxurious hall decorated with beautiful flowers, curtains, lamps and everything that needed to make a place look pretty. The whole place was filled with a number of circular tables with chairs surrounding them and those were occupied by all the guests.

Out of nervousness, Jiang Yuyan felt butterflies in her stomach and she could hear her heartbeats in the back of her head. She breathed deeply and tried to maintain that pretty smile on her face.

Lu Qiang noticed her and whispered in her ears, "You don't have to be nervous right now. You can keep it for tonight when I will take you to our home."

With her eyes wide open she gulped and looked at him but Lu Qiang just smiled as he did nothing wrong. Soon it was a time to exchange the rings. Parents from both the side came on the stage with ring's with them to hand it over to their kids.

269 She Belongs To Me Too..

First, it was Lu Qiang's turn. Ning Jiahui opened the ring's box to pass the ring to her son. There was a ring with a pink solitaire fixed in a platinum band. It was one of the most expensive rings which Lu Qiang personally selected for Jiang Yuyan and owned it in one of the auctions by paying a fortune for it. Soon it was going to be in the news as the pink diamond in it was one of the most expensive diamonds in the world.

Lu Qiang pulled the ring out from the box. he held Jiang Yuyan's hand and put the in Jiang Yuyan's ring finger. Everyone present there was stunned to see this ring. Jiang Yuyan was amazed by its beauty and looked at Lu Qiang. It was a surprise for her and for everyone. Other than his assistant Xiao Min, nobody knew about it. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

All the guests started to speak about the ring after seeing it on the screens in the hall which allowed everyone to take a closer look at ring exchange as it was not possible for every to be closer to the couple. All were rich people so it was not hard for them to understand the value of that ring and all were stunned to see it.

That was the President Lu of Lu Corporation, not any ordinary man so it was given that he would buy something extraordinary for the woman he loved on the special day of their lives.

Between the whispers of the guests, Jiang Yuyan too put the ring on Lu Qiang's finger and soon there were the loud sounds of clapping everywhere.

MC announced them an officially engaged couple. Everything that was happening was still like a dream for Jiang Yuyan and she said to look at him, "Is this all real?"

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and said, "Seems like it." Leaning closer to her, he said while staring at her cherry chips, "Do you

want me to prove if all this is a reality or a dream?”

“Huh?” she looked at him as not being able to understand the meaning because her brain was already full with lots of things happening around.

Seeing her puzzled face he replied, “If you feel the pain when my teeth bury in your lips, then it’s enough to make you realize if it is a dream or reality. What say?”

“Nope! The way you are talking is enough to prove that this is real,” She replied.

After exchanging the rings, A couple greeted all the guests and everyone wished them for the engagement. Lu Qiang introduced Jiang Yuyan to most of the important people there. The people, she might have to deal with in the future but at the moment no one was aware of it.

A Tian was there too who arrived just before the ring exchange. He went to Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan and wished them, “congratulations to both of you.” Both accepted it with a smile and Lu Qiang said, “Thank you for coming here like a human.”

“Hmm! It’s your engagement President Lu so today I will accept all the insult from you and return you with interest later, one day,” said An Tian not minding to his words.

“I will be waiting for it,” said Lu Qiang with a teasing smile on his face.

Jiang Yuyan noticed both of them and understood these two are not just a designer and a customer but more like friends and she liked the way both of them got along with each other by always throwing sarcastic comments and those were more of a funny kind. She found it similar to the way Lu Qiang share the bond with Lu Feng and her brother. She felt glad to see, Lu Qiang had a friend other than those two.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang came to them with Lu Lijun. “So my friend, you are finally able to steal my sister from me.”

“She belonged to me to start with.” Lu Qiang replied.

“And now she belongs to me too.” Lu Lijun said suddenly which made Lu Qiang, Lu Feng, and An Tian look at him.

“Of course as she is now your sister-in-law,” said Jiang Yang.

“Yes, she is but I will call her Yuyan only as she is my friend too like three of you.” Saying it Lu Lijun looked at Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan was happy to see this little iceberg willing to be her friend and accepting her wholes heartedly so she said, “Lu Lijun is right. First I was his friend then I am his sister-in-law so he can call me Yuyan.”

Lu Lijun smiled to look at her and said, “It was just because you were not annoying like other girls and my brother liked you but now I like you too. You are a good person.”

“Thank you Lu Lijun,” she replied and patted his head.

An Tian gave out a deep sigh and said, “Finally, there is someone you like other than your both brothers, Lu Lijun.”

“Hmm! But I don’t like you much,” Lu Lijun said coldly.

“I know and I am happy with even the hate I receive from the handsome young man like you.” Hearing it, Lu Lijun smiled and said, “Flattery won’t work on me but I will say you are not bad as you look from your face.”

“What? One brother called me an animal and the other one is calling this handsome western looking face a bad one. Do you know how many girls are crazy behind this handsome face?”

“All those must be your patients who came to you for your psychiatric expertise, An Tian,” Said Lu Feng.

“Not you too, Lu Feng. Why all these Lu brothers want to make me look bad?” An Tian said with fake sad expressions on his face.

“Ohh! So one more person is here who is just like us. Hmm! I like this guy,” Said Jiang Yang and hearing it, Lu Qiang realized he didn’t introduce Jiang Yang and An Tian to each other.

270 Horny Bunnies..

“Ohh! So one more person is here who is just like us. Hmm! I like this guy,” Said Jiang Yang and hearing it, Lu Qiang realized he didn’t introduce Jiang Yang and An Tian to each other

As Lu Qiang introduced them, Jiang Yang said, “So you are the one who made my pretty sister look like a princess.”

“I didn’t have to do much as she is a born princess.” An Tian replied and what he said was the truth.

“True!” Lu Lijun replied and others nodded as agreeing to it while Jiang Yuyan was feeling flustered with all the compliments she was getting that day.

When all were happy and enjoying here, on another side of the city someone was not happy to see the news about Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan’s engagement flashing on every news channel continuously.

After drinking till the end he could die, Ming Rusheng was unconscious for the almost whole day. Zhang Wei felt worried to see him sleeping till afternoon and tried to wake him up. When he was unable to do it he had to call the doctor. The doctor put him on saline and treated him to flush the alcohol from his body. He continued sleeping till the late evening not being aware of what was happening that day.

When he woke up, his head was heavy and hurting. He realized he was at his uncle’s place and checked the time. Soon he realized he was sleeping for long and it was another day. He picked up a TV remote from the bedside table and turned on the TV.

He searched through the channels and played the news. As expected there was news of Lu Qiang engagement flashing on all the news channels. Ming Rusheng saw Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan walking inside the venue while holding hands and

having smiles on their faces. He was just looking at Jiang Yuyan who was looking like a princess in that wine red dress.

He was happy to see her but the moment he saw Lu Qiang beside her, he felt frustrated and threw the remote on the floor. Hearing the sound of the TV from Ming Rusheng's room, Zhang Wei came there and saw what he was doing. Ming Rusheng was sitting in a bed with frustrated expressions on his face and looking at the TV.

Zhang Wei stepped towards the TV and switched it off. He went to Ming Rusheng but didn't know what to say. Ming Rusheng covered his face in his palms and ran them through his hair saying, "Everything finished."

"Don't think about it Ming Rusheng. Forget it," Zhang Wei tried to console him.

"I have no other option uncle. For the first time, I really fell for someone and I couldn't even confess my love to her."

"I know how you are feeling Ming Rusheng. Your uncle can understand you," Saying it Zhang Wei sat on the bed beside Ming Rusheng as he was feeling bad for him.

"Why did it happen to me? I am not able to handle it. I was better the way I was before. Why did she come back to china?" Ming Rusheng said and lied down in a bed again.

"We can't change what just has happened Ming Rusheng. I wish I could change it for you," Zhang Wei said while looking at Ming Rusheng who had tears rolling down from the corner of his eyes.

Ming Rusheng closed his eyes and said, "I wish I can just make that bastard disappeared from this world."

Zhang Wei ran his hand through Ming Rusheng's hair and said, "Your every wish is like a command for my son. Sleep and rest assured."

Ming Rusheng didn't understand what his uncle meant. He heard it and went back to sleep. Zhang Wei wanted to wake him up and asked to have dinner but the condition he was in at that moment, he preferred to let him sleep.

Soon the engagement ceremony came to an end and guests were leaving after Lu Jinhai bid them farewell. Only family members left behind and it was time to go home. Lu Qiang couldn't leave early with Jiang Yuyan as it was the function meant for them. He wanted to leave along with her to their home as soon as possible to celebrate this day with her in alone but he waited.

“You must be in a full plan to take my sister to your place?” Jiang Yang whispered. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

Lu Qiang looked at him and said, “Do you still need to know the answer from me, Jiang Yang?”

Jiang Yang sighed and said, “Hmm! My poor sister.”

“I bet she is willing to go with me too,” saying it Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan who heard their conversation and said, “Yes, I am willing to go.” She was not embarrassed to accept it.

“I can see that. Both of you are like horny bunnies nowadays.”

These words from Jiang Yang made Lu Feng and An Tian to laugh. Lu Feng looked around to see where Lu Lijun was and give out a sigh of relief when he saw him away from them with Wang Peng and Lu Han.

“Lu Qiang was like a horny bunny since he hit puberty but he was just waiting for his woman to come back.” An Tian too joined Jiang Yang to tease Lu Qiang. He then looked at Lu Feng and asked, “Am I write about him, Lu Feng?”

“Hmm! Right,” Lu Feng agreed and join Jiang Yang and An Tian.

Hearing it Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng and said, “Lu Feng! You are the second horny bunny here. I know you well.”

“Cough-Cough!” Lu Feng couldn't reply to Lu Qiang and keep silent.

“I know that my darling is a horny bunny. I had a doubt since long back,” said Jiang Yang again in a mood to tease Lu Feng.

Lu Feng pinched the space between his eyebrows and said to look at Jiang Yang, “Yes I am, but not for you and don’t call me darling as it makes my horny side to die in a moment.”

“Ohh! You hurt me darling,” Jiang Yang said with fake sad expressions on his face and others were laughing with this talk.

271 Uncontrollable Passion..

This second chapter of the day is dedicated to all my readers who are religiously voting for the novel and continuously supporting me going up in the ranking.. thank you, guys... :) and keep voting..

After having a fun talk with each other all the family members left to go to the mansion. The cars left one by one from the venue towards Lu Mansion. When the cars were on the highway, Lu Qiang's car suddenly took a right turn at one intersection on the highway. Lu Jinhai and the elder Lu's car were just behind him so both understood that Lu Qiang was going somewhere and both were aware of where was that 'somewhere'.

"My grandson is just like me. Too impatient," Said elder Lu with a smile on his face.

Zhao Shuang sighed and said, "Hmm! I can see that."

In Lu Jinhai's car-

As Lu Jinhai saw the car taking a right turn, he smiled and said, "I am sure our elder son has taken after his grandfather. He too doesn't care about others when it comes to loving his woman."

"Not just his grandfather but he took after his father too. Don't forget how shameless you used to be in the past," Said Ning Jiahui.

"Now, am I not?" he asked with a teasing smile on his face.

She frowned to hear it and said, "We are old now." Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

"Not that old. Do you doubt my capability?" he asked to tease her.

“Cough-Cough! All Lus are shameless,” she replied.

Lu Jinhai nodded and said, “Hmm! That is in our blood.”

In Lu Qiang’s car-

The driver was aware of his boss’s plan without even saying a single word from Lu Qiang and he took a right turn at the intersection on the highway to go towards the home of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan. Lu Qiang knew his driver was smart and he didn’t have to instruct him with anything.

Jiang Yuyan too understood where they were heading and this time she was not surprised, hesitant or shocked. Soon the partition between the driver seat and the back passenger seat was up with the song played in a car.

Lu Qiang looked at her and she looked back at him. Both had the same ‘wanting each other’ feelings in their eyes. This time there was no need for the word to be spoken as they understood each other through their intense sights.

Both hovered towards each other at the same time and kissed with the same passion not a bit less than from another one. Lu Qiang pulled her closer by holding her waist and held her tightly while Jiang Yuyan circled her arms around his neck. Both were kissing passionately not minding that they were in a car which was running on the highway.

This time, Jiang Yuyan’s dress was not a mermaid fit like last time when they were in a car but it was the one with the layered bottom with a hem. In that moving car, Lu Qiang lifted her up with one swift move and made her sit cross to him.

Jiang Yuyan too helped him to let her move easily and she was sitting on his lap while facing him. Her legs were folded in knees and resting on either side of him, on the car seat.

While kissing, Lu Qiang moved his hand along with her legs from her knees to her feet and to remove her heels and then surrounded his hands around her curvy lower back again.

During all these position changing process they didn’t stop kissing for even a bit. As Jiang Yuyan had the advantage to dominate him and to control him while sitting cross, she didn’t

let go of this chance and straight grabbed his top lip and sucked it while biting it slowly.

Lu Qiang allowed her to do it being happy with her cherry-like bottom lip and bite it a bit harshly. Jiang Yuyan felt the pain but that didn't make her stop, instead, she became aggressive. She grabbed the hair on the backside of his head and made him look up by clutching and pulling them.

This was another side he was seeing of her. He followed what she wanted to do. Jiang Yuyan looked aggressive and while kissing him she was moving her fingers through his hairs while clutching them in between. She bit his lip that made it bleed.

Feeling the pain, Lu Qiang's hands that were resting on the curve of her lower back, moved further down to clutch her butt cheeks in both hands. Lu Qiang retreated his hands and leaned forward to remove his jacket. Jiang Yuyan parted away and helped him remove it.

Once he was done, They resumed their kiss and This time lu Qiang slipped his hand inside her dress to grab her soft butt cheeks as because of her dress he was not able to feel them properly. While kissing he was kneading those soft butt cheeks and he was enjoying it.

Both were panting heavily as feeling short for the breath but no one was ready to give up. Sucking and nibbling each other's lips and rolling their tongues together in between to taste each other whole and both continued what they were doing.

Soon Lu Qiang shifted from her lips to her slender neck. his eyes were following her bared neck and shoulders throughout the ceremony and wished to suck her fair skin every time he saw it. he moved his one hand on the backside of her neck and pushed her face up to get into the crook of her neck.

Tracing the lines over her delicate neck with the fingers of his other hand he was tasting her which made her moan softly. Soon there were light red marks on her skin which were clearly visible with the contrast to her fair skin.

From her neck, he shifted down to her shoulders. he caressed them with the hands first, then started to kiss them while biting with the teeth. This time there was no gentleness in both of their actions. Both looked high on adrenaline and wanted to devour each other at the very moment.

272 Immersed In A Passion..

From her neck, Lu Qiang shifted down to her shoulders. he caressed them with the hands first, then started to kiss them while biting with the teeth. This time there was no gentleness in both of their actions. Both looked high on adrenaline and wanted to devour each other at the very moment.

when Lu Qiang moved his hands to her back to unzip a dress, just then the car stopped. Lu Qiang realized they have reached the home. He retreated his hands and made her sit on the car seat. Just as the last time the driver didn't get out of the car to open the door for them and continued sitting inside with the partition on.

Lu Qiang opened the car door and stepped out of it first. He offered Jiang Yuyan his hand and accepting it, she stepped out too. Noticing she didn't have her sandals on as he took them off in a car, he lifted her in his arms and walked inside in a hurry to go to their bedroom as both were greedy to get each other as soon as possible.

Jiang Yuyan calmly let him lift her and surrounded her hands around his neck. She was looking at her man who was walking easily while carrying her, with no expression on his face.

Crossing the living room and the butler and the servants which were present there to greet them, Lu Qiang walked towards the staircase avoiding them as there was no one but only two of them.

Jiang Yuyan too didn't look at anyone or noticed anyone there as her whole focus was on admiring her man and how much she looked at him, it was not enough for her.

As Lu Qiang crossed the staircase while still carrying her in his arms and reached the room he put her down. They didn't have patience and just as he closed the door, they hovered over each other.

Kissing each other like crazy, both were moving around the bedroom as how much they kissed it was not enough for them. Pressing and rolling each other against the wall, then moving to some other random corner not knowing where they were moving immersed in a kiss being unaware of the stuff in the bedroom. Soon the floor was occupied with the things they made fall down, immersed in lovemaking.

Moving her hands from his neck to his collar, Jiang Yuyan started to unbutton his shirt. After unbuttoning only the top two buttons somehow while keeping up with a kiss she was not able to unbutton the next one.

Lu Qiang stopped kissing and pulled both sides of his shirt to unbutton the shirt without going in a hassle to do it one by one which made the buttons to fall on the ground and roll in different directions in a room. He removed his shirt and threw it on the floor, not breaking eye contact with her even for a single moment.

Once he was done, they resumed. Kissing her passionately while rolling his tongue with hers, Lu Qiang moved his hands to her back and unzipped her dress and with a simple tug, it fell on the floor. Realizing she was wearing something different that he never saw her wearing it before Lu Qiang stepped back to take a look at her.

Jiang Yuyan was wearing a black lace almost transparent corset with a panty having a garter belt attached to her stockings that made her curvy body to look seductively beautiful. Seeing her in a new form, Lu Qiang exhaled from his mouth and got back to her as it was difficult for him to hold back.

There was a study table beside Lu Qiang. He took her to the table and pushed all the stuff on it to make a space which made everything fall down.

Lu Qiang made her sit on the table by lifting her with his one hand surrounding her waist and the other one holding her leg which was surrounding his waist. Jiang Yuyan was sitting on the table with her both legs on his either side being ready to

resume what they were doing. After kissing for a while, Lu Qiang moved to her chest, kissing and licking her skin.

He removed the black lacy transparent corset and threw it on the floor too. Her bosoms were bared in front of him and he didn't wait to grab them in his palms and knead them to feel their softness. Soon the hand replaced with his soft lips and warm tongue.

Jiang Yuyan clutched his bare and strong shoulders with her hands and left out soft moans with her head tilted up in pleasure, she was feeling with each of his move. Soon her hands moved from his shoulder to the back of his head and while running her fingers through his hair she was pressing his face against her breast even more. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

As he was sucking and nibbling the pink peaks of her pearl white bosoms she felt the force building up somewhere down in her core. Now she knew what it was as she was familiar with it and she was ready to face it.

Once Lu Qiang was done with tasting her soft bosoms to his heart's content, he lifted her in his arms and took her to the bed. Putting her down in a bed, Lu Qiang removed his pants belt in a second and throwing it on the floor, he removed his pants too. Jiang Yuyan looked at him and her sight fell on the bulge under his underwear which made her gulped and breathed deeply.

Lu Qiang went on top of her and sat between her legs. He ran his hands along her legs from her knees to her thighs towards the garter belt on them. He traced it with his fingers and moved his head down to her thighs. He got an idea of how to open that belt while running his fingers across it.

Using his teeth, he separated the garter belt from the stockings she was wearing on one leg and did the same with the other one. He pulled down stocking which made her pretty legs visible.

273 Her Wish...

Pulling it out with his teeth, Lu Qiang separated the garter belt from the stockings she was wearing. After being done with one leg, he did the same with the other leg which made the fair skin on her pretty legs visible.

This time not a single word was spoken. Both were in sync and both could understand what others wanted by just looking into the eyes or sensing it just like that. Removing the stockings and throwing them on the floor, Lu Qiang hovered over her to kiss as her swollen lips were waiting for his attention.

Kissing her ferociously again while pinning down her hands in the mattress on her either side with their fingers entangled with each other, he went down on her. Trailing kisses and nuzzling into her soft skin he stopped at her lower abdomen.

The panty she was wearing was from one of the most expensive brands. It was black lace panty with soft silk expensive material which hid the only necessary part between her thighs. Lu Qiang kissed her between her thighs over her panty which touched her sensitive part and nuzzled into it.

Jiang Yuyna inhaled deeply being ready for the next things. Nuzzling over her sex and smelling that seductive aroma from her made him feel like to devour her at the very moment. Without waiting for a single moment he tore her panty and threw it somewhere. The heavenly space between her two legs was exposed in front of him. He parted her legs and moved ahead to taste her sour salty and organic fluid.

This time Jiang Yuyan didn't try to close her legs but she was relaxed and allowed him to do what he wanted. Lu Qiang parted her lower lips and ran his tongue through them from bottom to upward towards her nub. The touch of his warm tongue sent a shiver through her spine and she moaned with her back arched up.

Licking and playing with her already swollen nub, Lu Qiang was enjoying the way she was reacting to his touch. Jiang Yuyan's hands which were resting on a mattress while clutching to the bedsheet moved to the back of his head and she pressed his face against her.

Lu Qiang moved his head up to look at her and said, "Greedy, huh?"

Feeling that he stopped and moved back, Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes to look at him while wanting for more. Hearing his words she felt puzzled and didn't know what to say.

"Want more?" Seeing her puzzled he asked to which she nodded as saying 'Yes'.

Lu Qiang smiled and went back to what he was doing. Licking and sucking her sensitive spots, leaving her gasping for the air, he inserted his finger inside her and started to move it slowly in and out. He knew the sensitive spot inside her and started to play with his finger inside.

"Ahhh! Ummm..." Suddenly she moaned loudly as to sense the pleasures feeling in her core.

Hearing her, Lu Qiang could guess he was in the right direction and also she was wet like ready to get her first time with him. He worked his finger to move faster, swirling his tongue around her nub. Soon there was a change in Jiang Yuyan's body which was reacting to his work.

Clutching his hair tightly, with her legs folded in knees and toes curled to bury in a mattress while her back arched up to make a curve and her head tilted up, Jiang Yuyan gave out a loud moan while crying out his name. "Ahhhhh...Lu Qiang...ummmm!"

She fell back in a mattress gasping for air, still saying his name, with her mind in a fuzzy state. Lu Qiang stopped once she was done and went back to her. Looking at her with a smile on his face he said, "Nothing is better than seeing you crying out my name. It makes me want to do it more and more."

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes to look at him. Breathing heavily and being still immersed in the moment of her release she asked, “Are we done?”

“Hmm!” Lu Qiang nodded as saying yes. She was looking at him as he stopped after doing it only once opposite to what he did with her last time.

Understanding her unspoken question he said, “You are already tired as the whole day was hectic so tonight I am letting you go” but seeing her still staring at him, he asked, “Do you want to go for more?”

“N..No! No more but...” she said and stopped suddenly.

“But?” he asked to know what she wanted to say.

Jiang Yuyan felt hesitant to say what she wanted to, so Lu Qiang asked again, “Tell me, Yuyan.”

He wanted to know what his woman wished for as he didn't want to leave her unsatisfied. Moreover, he always enjoyed making her go through her release again and again as much as she liked it.

“I..want..to...do..the same...for you,” she said with a very low voice with her words scattered. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

“Hmm? You wanted to do what?” he asked as not being sure of what she wanted.

She gulped and replied while staring into his eyes and this time she was not hesitant, “What you did for me, I want to do the same for you.”

Hearing her, Lu Qiang's heart almost skipped a bit. He didn't know what to say and exhaled deeply. Seeing him not reacting to it, she asked, “Won't you like it if I do it for you?”

Startled by her sudden question, he replied, “N..No! It's not that. You might not like it and I don't want you to go through anything that you won't like.”

“I will like everything that belongs to you,” she replied but Lu Qiang didn't know how to reply to her as he was actually

worried she won't like it.

Jiang Yuyan was out of the tiredness of her release and stared in his eyes to get his approval for what she had in her mind, not wanting to give up.

Note: Next Chapters might have content that you might not want to read so avoid to read the next two chapters...

274 Ready To Feel Her Man...

“You might not like it and I don’t want you to go through anything that you won’t like,” said Lu Qiang feeling worried about her.

“I like everything that belongs to you,” Jiang Yuyan replied the same way Lu Qiang replied to her when she was worried to show him the scars on her body as she thought those were ugly.

Lu Qiang didn’t know how to reply to her as he was actually worried she won’t like it and might hate other things too which they had yet to do.

Jiang Yuyan was out of the tiredness of her release and stared into his eyes to get his approval for what she had in her mind.

“Are you sure,” He asked as realizing she meant what she said a moment before.

“Hmm!” Nodding, she placed both hands on his shoulder. Getting up a little from the mattress, she turned him down to get on top of him.

Surrendering to her wish he lied in bed and let her get over him. Jiang Yuyan had intense look in her eyes, different from her usual shy self. Getting on top of him, she leaned down to kiss him and took control.

She started to suck and nibble his lips while caressing his cheeks with her fingers and running them through his hair in between. She trailed kisses from his lips to his neck and started to suck his skin like she was craving it for ages.

The warm touch of her lips and her tongue in the crook of his neck was making him go higher with what he was feeling, aroused by his woman’s simple act of foreplay and called out her name, “Yuyan!” in his hoarse voice with his eyes closed to feel her touch deeply.

While going down she could feel his huge bulge under her sex and rub against it that made her feel aroused and panting heavily she bit on his neck. He started to have red marks on his skin and the marks of her teeth were visible to know how harshly she did it. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

Feeling her, sucking and nibbling on his skin Lu Qiang too left out light moans but when she bit him on the neck, he growled along with the moaning and clutched her waist in his hands.

When she started to move her lower side against his manhood, he held her both butt cheeks in his hands and made her a bit move up and down as he was liking the warm and wet touch of her sex against his manhood which he could feel even through the cloth of his underwear.

Jiang Yuyan moved further down to his strong chest. She nuzzled into it as she always found his manly scent seductive than his perfume. She licked his nipples and tugged them by pulling out with her teeth. She was following what Lu Qiang used to do with her always.

She was doing it for the first time but the thought of doing something for her man and that bodily need made her find her own way and she was doing it really fine.

Lu Qiang moved his hands back from her waist to her hair and ran his fingers through them while panting heavily with the sweet assault of her woman on him. Jiang Yuyan felt each and every inch of his strong chest with her hands while sucking and licking it.

She moved further down to his toned abs and was amazed to see how seductively beautiful they were. She saw it before and touched it too but the way she was doing it at that moment was the first time and wanted to admire her man wholly.

Lu Qiang opened his eyes to look at her and saw she was looking at his abs and smiled. He moved his hand from her hair to her chin and made her look at him. She looked at him and held his hand which was holding her chin and kissed in his palm then looked back at the thing she was busy in admiring.

Taking a closer look at his abs while running her fingers across slowly she started to kiss them lightly and moved down further where she could feel his bulge.

Kisses from her till down to his abdomen were making him harder and difficult to control himself. Jiang Yuyan looked at his hard manhood and she touched it with her hand which made her heart to beat faster but she didn't think to stop. She tugged her fingers in the upper line of his underwear to pull it down but Lu Qiang got up and sat in a bed while holding her hand and said, "You don't have to. If you..."

"I want to, so don't stop me," she said in a firm voice before he could say anything further while looking into his eyes with serious expressions on her face. She looked at her hands which he was holding to stop her. Lu Qiang let go of her hands and helped her to remove his underwear.

While removing it, Jiang Yuyan's sight was fixed on his manhood. Though she saw it a few times before, it was the first time she was going to explore it. Removing his last piece of clothing, Lu Qiang was sitting in front of her on his knees. Jiang Yuyan too came on her knees and kissed him, circling her arms around his neck.

Kissing her back, Lu Qiang stood up on his knees pulling her up by holding her waist. Both were on their knees in that soft mattress. Her soft bosoms were pressed against his strong chest and his erect manhood was poking into her lower abdomen while pulsating a bit up and down.

Feeling his hard manhood against her lower abdomen, Jiang Yuyan had a strong urge to hold it in her hands. While kissing she moved her one hand down to his lower abdomen and held his manhood in her hand. To feel it completely she moved her hand along its length from its bottom to the crown.

275 Determined To Please Him...

While kissing, Jiang Yuyan moved her one hand down and held his erect manhood in her hand. To feel it she moved her hand along its length from its bottom to the crown.

She felt it was hard but soft at the same time, just as she felt when she helped him in a shower for the first time but this time it was more intimate and she was not scared. She liked the way it was warm different from both of their whole body temperatures.

When Lu Qiang felt her hand, holding and caressing his erection, he growled and kissed her hard that made her lower lip to bleed but both were not in a mood to stop anymore. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

Feeling the pain in her lower lip she tightened the grip of her hand in a reflex of a pain that made him feel aroused. Soon they parted away while panting and looking into the eyes of each other, breaking the threads of saliva due to the distance between their lips. Jiang Yuyan looked down towards her hand which was enjoying and liking the warmth of his boner part.

She looked back at him to look into his eyes for approval to which he nodded a little. While Lu Qiang was standing on his knees, Jiang Yuyan sat in a bed with her legs folded backward in knees and her face was closer to his manhood. Leaning a bit down she was able to take it in her mouth, what she was intending to do since she asked him, she wanted to do it for him.

When Jiang Yuyan sat down, Lu Qiang gulped as it was going to be the first time for him when he was going to feel it and it was his woman who was willing to do it.

Holding his erection in her both hands, Jiang Yuyan looked at the tip and thought what to do. Next second she moved her face ahead and licked its tip with her tongue hesitantly. She tasted something salty there and retreated.

Feeling her warm tongue on his most sensitive part, Lu Qiang's whole body shudder but when he saw her retreating after licking just a little, he stopped himself from reacting and decided to stop her but just then she licked it again.

This time too she tasted something salty but didn't retreat and licked it wholly. Lu Qiang understood that was the precum she tasted and as it was her first time she might have felt weird.

The second lick was not momentary but a longer one and she started to roll her tongue around the crown to feel its softness even better and she liked it.

With the touch of her rolling tongue around his crown Lu Qiang moaned loudly and his hands which were resting on her shoulder, moved to her hair to run his fingers through them.

Jiang Yuyan moved her sight up to look at him while still licking the top and she liked the way he was reacting to it. Lu Qiang looked at her too. The pleasure tension on his face, the intense look in his eyes and the way he was panting was something she liked to see.

Soon she decided to take it in her mouth. The moment she did it, she lodged backward and moved a bit away from it. Lu Qiang tried to reassure her that she didn't have to do it if she really didn't feel like it, but she was not ready to back down.

They just stared in each other's eyes, feeling the rising sexual tension between the two of them.

Jiang Yuyan went back to what she was doing and soon her warm lips began to heat up his manhood even more as he let out a soft moan.

As she slowly took it inside her mouth, he felt the tip of his shaft hitting the inner roof of her mouth, so moist, so warm as her tongue wiggled around.

Lu Qiang's head tilted back a bit with seductive moans coming out from his throat. Noticing it, she understood she was going

in the right direction and wanted to do it even more. She wanted to see her man falling down in a bed with the pleasure he got from his woman.

Not Just Lu Qiang but Jiang Yuayn too liked it inside her mouth and started to move it in and out slowly with her lips circled around it and a tongue teasing a tip of his manhood.

Lu Qiang looked down towards her to see how and what she was doing while moving her hair to one side by holding them in his hands. He saw how carefully she was doing it, moving it in and out to let him feel it and she didn't look unwilling at all. Moreover, it looked like she was liking it too.

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with his manhood moving in and out in her mouth and as she noticed those pleasant expressions on his face with panting heavily. She started to move a bit faster that made him call out her name. Ahhhh.. Yu..yan..." The sounds from his throat, the soft moaning with growling was seductive to her ears and she wanted to hear it more and more.

In a few moments Lu Qiang felt that he was going to explode in her mouth, he stopped her by retreating his manhood back. She looked at him with a puzzled expression and asked, "Did I hurt you?"

"Sitting back in a mattress with the same position as her, folding legs backward in knees, he said in his hoarse voice while wiping her wet lips with his thumb, "No, but I might come inside your mouth so it's better to stop now."

"I don't mind it," she said as she didn't want to stop.

"I know but it's enough for the first time," he replied.

"But I want to taste you the way you taste me," she said with serious expressions on her face as not in a mood to back down.

276 Shhh! Let Me Do My Job...

“But I want to taste you the way you taste me,” Jiang Yuyan said with serious expressions on his face as not in a mood to back down.

Lu Qiang didn't know how to make her understand it. She spoke again, “I am not a kid. I understand everything. Don't stop me from doing it as I never stopped you,” she said being determined, not listen to him and being ready to lean towards him.

“Yuyan...”

Lu Qiang wanted to stop her but before he could say anything further, Jiang Yuyan leaned forward to hover over him staring intensely into his eyes. She pushed him in a bed and before Lu Qiang could utter a word, she said, “Shhh! Let me do my job.”

Lu Qiang was surprised to see her dominating side as he was used to seeing her shy and hesitant all the time. Jiang Yuyan knew only one thing that she wanted to do something for him and she had to be bold for it. Moreover, she liked it too. For her, the way she was making him feel was the best sight to see.

Lu Qiang listened to her and lied in a mattress calmly. Giving a peck on his lips and without waiting for a second, Jiang Yuyan went down on him. She looked at his manhood which was still erect and held it in her hands while Lu Qiang was looking at her with his head lift up a little from a pillow.

Holding it firmly in her hands, circling her fingers around the shaft, she looked at him in his eyes and took it in her mouth again with a gentle lick on the tip. Lu Qiang expressions changed and he threw his head back in a pillow with a loud moan with his eyes closed.

Moving his manhood in and out with her tongue wiggling around the tip, Jiang Yuyan increased her pace. Till then she

understood what she had to do to make him feel better.

Soon Lu Qiang felt he was going to explode. “Ahhh...Yuyan!” with a loud moan, clutching the bedsheet in his strong hands and calling out her name he came in her mouth. Jiang Yuyan felt a little weird but she swallowed the fluid came out from him. She was ready for it as she knew what was the end result going to be.

Panting heavily Lu Qiang looked at her. She looked at Puzzled like not knowing what to do next. He sat up in bed immediately, forgetting the pleasure he just felt after his release as nothing was more important for him than her.

Catching his breath and having a worried expression on his face, he asked, “Are you alright?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded with her lips and palms drenched in his fluid. Lu Qiang gave out a deep sigh of relief and moved to the bedside table to get paper napkins from there. He pulled out a few paper napkins, wiped her lips and her hands with it and said, “let’s get fresh first.” Jiang Yuyna nodded as saying yes.

Throwing the tissue papers in his hands into the trash can, he took her to the bathroom. Standing under the shower, both couldn’t stop themselves from kissing each other.

Kissing her and his lips still touching to hers with a little smile on them he said, “I can see my shy Yuyan getting bolder day by day”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan felt shy and had a smile on her face with her eyes lowered down. She looked up into his eyes and asked, “Haven’t you like it?”

“Hmm! Very much but did you like it?” Lu Qiang asked staring into her eyes to know her true thoughts.

“Yes, I liked it. Would it be fine if I do it again?” she asked which surprised Lu Qiang as he never expected her to do this for him because he was always worried to think she might hate it and go back to where she started.

“Only if you feel like doing it,” saying he kissed her on the forehead.

She smiled and they kissed again, under a shower while holding each other tightly in their embrace.

The next morning, when they wake up, Jiang Yuyan noticed the whole floor in the room was occupied with stuff on it, scattered here and there, from the vases on the shelves in the room to the stuff from the study table. Along with it, their clothes were lying on the floor too.

Jiang Yuyan was about to step out of the bed to clear it all, just then Lu Qiang pulled her back in bed and asked, “Where are you going? Let me cuddle you for some time.”

Jiang Yuyan stopped him and said, “I need to clear the room. It’s messy everywhere.”

“It’s not your job to do. The servant will look after it,” saying it held her tightly with his hand surrounding her waist and one leg placed on her thighs.

Trying to get out of his hold, she said, “Look at the condition of the room what will they think.”

“They won’t think anything because it is obvious to happen when one man and woman sleep in one room,” he said and closed his eyes while burying his face in the crook of her neck.

“Let me at least get our clothes.” More than that scattered stuff, Jiang Yuyan was worried about the way their clothes were lying on the floor. Not just clothes but their undergarments too and in that her panty was lying somewhere in a torn condition.

“No need they will handle it,” He said, still his eyes closed and cuddled her tightly. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click for visiting.

“Won’t it be embarrassing? I mean look at my clothes. The way you.....”

“In the future, they will get to see this often, so let them get used to it. Now sleep for some more time,” he said stopping her from saying further. She understood he won’t listen, so she gave up and preferred to sleep.

278 Dreaming About The Future...

“If you are happy like this, then I won’t mind it,” he said which made Jiang Yuyan smiled but he spoke again with a sly smile on his face, “But once you will be done with paint, I will be taking you to the bed so always be prepared for it.”

Hearing it, a smile on her face disappeared and she said while staring in his eyes innocently, “I might be tired after painting for long.”

Lu Qiang caressed her cheek with his thumb and said, “In bed, I will do everything. You just have to relax and enjoy it.”

“This is not done. I might want to do something too.”

“Who is stopping you?” Saying it he moved his face closer to her and whispered in her ear, “I won’t mind if you will do again and again, what you did last night.” His words made her remind her boldness last night which made her blush and to have goosebumps on her body.

Seeing the goosebumps, Lu Qiang caressed her arm and spoke again in his hoarse voice, “You don’t know how heavenly that feeling was when you.....”

Jiang Yuyan immediately covered his mouth with her palm to stop him from speaking further as every word from him was making her feel like to hide somewhere and she didn’t want to remember what she did last night.

Looking at her flushed face, Lu Qiang removed her hand that was covering his mouth and he asked, “Are you shy now?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded as saying yes while looking in the other direction but his face. He stopped teasing her and changed the topic. “Paint but give some time to your poor husband too.”

Hearing it, she looked at him and replied immediately with a smile on his face, “I will paint when you are in the office and when you are back I will be just with you.” “Find authorized

novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience ,
Please click for visiting.

“Hmm! That is fare enough,” He said and patted her head.

She had a smile on her face, thinking about the future and the time they will be going to spend together in their home and said again, “Then in the evening we can be out here enjoying the beauty of this place.”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “Hmm! You, me and our kids.”

Hearing the word kids, Jiang Yuyan felt something different and it was a nice a feeling she had. Something that belongs to only him and her and the result of their love. “Right! With our kids!”

“How many kids should we have?” he asked while still holding her closer to him surrounding his hands to her waist.

Jiang Yuyan felt excited to hear this question and replied while looking into his eyes with her bright ones which were shining like the stars to imagine their happy future with kids, “Two. A boy like you and a girl like me.”

“Okay! I am fine with it,” he replied agreeing to it.

They continued to talk about their happy future having pleasant smiles on their faces and dreaming about it being unaware of the unfortunate incident going to happen even before they could move closer to their dreams.

The next morning when Ming Rusheng woke up, he was in a weak condition as he was sleeping since the night before Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang’s engagement and alcohol made him even worse. He still had saline attached to his hand as Zhang wei called the doctor again to check him.

Ming Rusheng was not in a mood to get out of the bed and he didn’t even want to do anything. Zhang Wei was waiting for him to wake up while sitting in the chair in the room beside Ming Rusheng’s bed.

“Finally you woke up.” Said Zhang Wei.

Ming Rusheng looked at his uncle and asked, “How long did I sleep?”

“Not much. Just get fresh and I will bring breakfast for you,” Zhang Wei said avoiding his question.

“I am not hungry,” he said and closed his eyes again.

“I know it and you won’t be hungry even after a few more days pass but this time you have to listen to me if you are a bit for this old man,” Zhang Wei knew, Ming Rusheng is a kind of stubborn person and there was only one way and that was the emotional blackmail.

“Don’t blackmail me like this uncle,” Ming Rusheng said with still his eyes closed.

“You didn’t leave any choice for me. do you think I am happy to see you in like this?”

Hearing his uncles words, Ming Rusheng didn’t say anything as he knew how much his uncle loved him and cared for him.

Zhang Wei continued, “I informed my sister that you are with me but they want you to come back home. Your father had something to talk to you about the business thing and want to see you in the office today.”

“I don’t want to,” Ming Rusheng replied.

Zhang Wei was expecting this reply Ming Rusheng as given to his condition but still, he didn’t give up and said, “Till when you would be like this. It’s a time for you to take over the family business and be able to compete with the others. You have to prove your worth Ming Rusheng because I know you are one smart man and you can be a very successful businessman.”

“I don’t know anything and right now I don’t think I can do anything more,” still Ming Rusheng was reluctant and didn’t want to understand anything and made Zhang Wei say harsh words.

“Losing a girl should not affect you this much and remember it’s just that they are engaged and not married. If you want what you desire then fight for it and for that you have to take the business in your hand and you have to be the king”

Hearing it, Ming Rusheng remembered the words said by Lu Qiang a few days back and they ringed in his ears like a bell 'Why are you being a dog then. Be a king and get to know everything'.

279 Back To His Old Self...

“Be the King!”

Hearing it, Ming Rusheng remembered the words said by Lu Qiang a few days back and those words started to ring in his ears like a bell ‘Why are you being a dog then. Be a king and get to know everything’.”

Remembering those words, Ming Rusheng immediately got up and sat in a bed. He shut his eyes tight and covered his ears with his hands to stop those sounds ringing in his ears again and again.

Seeing him like this, Zhang Wei felt worried and asked, “Are you okay, Ming Rusheng?”

Ming Rusheng opened his eyes and removed the hands from his ears. He looked at his uncle and answered, “No uncle I am not but soon I am going to be very much fine.”

There was something different in his eyes. though he looked weak physically at the moment, the something that was in his eyes showed he was not weak but had some strong determination in his eyes.

Throwing the quilt to one side from his legs, Ming Rusheng stepped out of the bed and said, “I am starving, uncle. I need something to eat first.” He was weak but still handled himself and straight went to the dining. On the way to the dining room, he felt his head was spinning and felt sudden darkness in front of his eyes but still he continued walking without any support.

“Slow Ming Rusheng. You are still weak.” Saying it, Zhang Wei followed Ming Rusheng to the dining table. He instructed the servant to serve breakfast for both of them and sat opposite Ming Rusheng on the dining table.

Zhang Wei already instructed servants to prepare a light, healthy, tasty and Ming Rusheng’s favorite food as he wanted him to eat well and recover from the weakness he might be feeling after starving for two days.

As the servant served the food, Ming Rusheng started to eat while Zhang Wei was looking at him with hurt feelings in his eyes. He was feeling bad for Ming Rusheng as this handsome boy was looking like in a bad condition.

Ming Rusheng was one handsome man as the royal blood of his ancestors was running in his body. Ming's belonged to the royal family and they were rich since their ancestor's times. He was tall, handsome, with a well-maintained body and his personality always gave an aura of a person born in a royal family.

Those grey eyes and deep golden-brown hair were the signature feature of Ming's that made him look attractive with his carved features, sharp nose strong jawline and the lips which had beautiful curves at the corners which made his smile to look anyone wants to die for.

At this moment, To Zhang Wei, he looked totally a different person. The boy who never had been like this and weak to this level and who was always a strong person, now he was sitting like a lost one in front of him. The boy he doted on since he born and did his best to raise him well like his parent.

His hair was messy, skin looked pale, eyes had bags under them, the face was not even shaved and he looked like had no will to live. A handsome man was looking weak and lost, in love with a woman.

Zhang Wei wanted to do something for him and he thought to make him busy with the business and also, this hurtful turn in his life could be the biggest motivation for him to do well. He just wanted Ming Rusheng to do well in his life and he was ready to do anything to make him happy.

Ming Rusheng realized his uncle was looking at him. Lifting his head up, he asked, "Are you not eating?"

"I am!" saying it Zhang Wei started to eat too.

Once Ming Rusheng finished eating and felt energized, he excused himself to get fresh. After half an hour, Ming Rusheng came out to the living room, wearing a neat and clean grey business suit and looked properly groomed. Ming

Rusheng had everything available in his bedroom in Zhang Wei's home since he was a kid, just like he had everything in Ming Mansion.

Zhang Wei felt happy to see him back as his old self and said, "My handsome Ming Rusheng is back now I am happy."

Seeing his favorite person, his uncle happy for him, Ming Rusheng said, "I always look handsome, uncle. Even if I am dead, my dead body would be the most handsome among all the dead bodies around."

Hearing it, Zhang Wei laughed and said, "Absolutely right. My son is the most handsome person." Zhang Wei felt happy to see Ming Rusheng witty like before.

Ming Rusheng finally smiled a little to see his uncle laughing. He knew he made his uncle worried so he decided to do what he suggested and said, "I should go to the office now as father had called me there."

"Yeah! Go and do your best. You are a Ming and business is in your blood. I know you will be the best businessman in this country one day," said Zhang Wei having a wide smile on his face.

Ming Rusheng smiled to hear it and said, "You never feel tired by praising me, uncle."

"Because, you are a person who deserves to be praised," Zhang Wei replied as being aware of the capability of Ming Rusheng. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

"Now you are being too nice to me. I know you are always biased towards me and even if I am bad, I would always be the best person in your eyes."

"Haha! That is true but the things I said are not hollow. You know your own worth too. You just need to focus as I told you are a Ming and business is in your blood."

"Hmm! I will remember it, uncle." Saying it Ming Rusheng went to the door of the Zhang residence but turned to look at

his uncle and called him, "Uncle!"

"Huh?" Zhang Wei looked at him to know why he called.

"You look really nice when you laugh." Saying it Ming Rusheng left to go out leaving his uncle with puzzled expressions on his face.

It was rare to see Zhang Wei laughing and even if he did, it was always for Ming Rusheng.

280 Not An Ordinary Person...

Lu Qiang dropped Jiang Yuyan to university and went to the office. Bodyguards were already there to protect Jiang Yuyan if the condition arises. When Jiang Yuyan was saying bye to Lu Qiang, Ming Lan reached to the university gate but this time Ming Rusheng was not with her. She came in another car and she had a driver with her.

Ming Lan went to them and wished, “Congratulations on getting engaged.”

Lu Qiang just nodded while Jiang Yuyan said “Thank you” to her and casually asked, “Today brother Ming Rusheng is not with you.” Hearing it Lu Qiang’s expressions changed but he kept silent.

“He is not home for the last two days as he must be busy somewhere so I came in another car,” Ming Lan replied.

“Ohh! Okay,” Saying it Jiang Yuyan was ready to go inside with Ming Lan.

Lu Qiang had an idea of what might have happened to Ming Rusheng. He said bye to Jiang Yuyan and left for the office saying he will come to receive her in the evening.

When Jiang Yuyan entered the class, all the students in the class were looking at her as she was the known person now, the future queen of the biggest business organization ‘The Lu Corporations’. She avoided their gazes and straight went to Nixxie who was looking at her with a welcoming smile while sitting in her chair.

Nixxie was wearing her usual clothes jeans and a T-shirt. She never wore clothes like other girls such as pretty and skin showing dresses though she was from a rich family and it made hard to approach because of her silent personality too.

“Congratulations my friend for becoming a celebrity officially,” Nixxxie said smiling to look at her, just as Jiang Yuyan sat beside her.

“Let me be the ordinary person Nixx,” saying it, Jiang Yuyan kept her book on the table and opened it. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

Nixxxie was not in a mood to stop teasing Jiang Yuyan and said, “You were never an ordinary person to start with.”

“Huh? I am an ordinary person since my birth,” Jiang Yuyan said while flipping the pages and going through the book.

“I have a good sixth sense to identify between ordinary and special people,” Nixxxie replied.

Jiang Yuyan moved her sight from the book to Nixxxie and asked, “Really? Then tell me, what is the special thing in me, which your sixth sense told you.”

“The most important thing...” saying it Nixxxie stopped and Jiang Yuyan looked at her with questioning sight.

“Well, you are the only one who was able to be my friend and you know what? Only a special person has the ability to become my friend.” Saying it she laughed.

“Bad joke!” Jiang Yuyan said annoyingly and looked back in her book.

“Sorry I was trying to annoy you,” Nixxxie said while smiling but when Jiang Yuyan looked back in her book after being annoyed, Nixxxie looked at Jiang Yuyan carefully. It seems like she could see through her. She definitely sensed something about Jiang Yuyan but wanted to keep it to herself.

Ming Rusheng went to the Ming industries as his father asked him to come to the office. Just like Lu Corporation, Ming industries had huge and luxurious corporate aria with tall and beautifully constructed office buildings and tight security everywhere. Working in the Ming industries and Lu Corporation was the prestigious thing for any employee there.

Just like Lu Qiang, Ming Rusheng was the special person for the employees in Ming Industries but the only difference was they hardly get to see him there as he didn't visit the office more often.

Ming Rusheng straight went to his father's office which was on the eleventh floor instead of being at the topmost floor. There he met his father, Ming Yusheng who was waiting for his son.

Entering the office, Ming Rusheng said, "Good morning, Father."

Ming Yusheng nodded to his words and asked, "Where were you Ming Rusheng

Sitting in the chair in front of his father's office table, he replied, "I was with Uncle Zhang Wei for some reason."

"I see!" Ming Yusheng thought about what he decided and he said again but with seriousness in his voice and on his face," From now on I want you to concentrate on business more than in other things. You know one day you have to handle lead everything."

"I know father," Ming Rusheng replied as understanding his father.

"I am not comparing you to anyone because I already know my son's capability but I want you to make your own position in the business world even better than Lu Qiang," Ming Yusheng said.

Ming Yusheng was a talented businessman and he saw Lu Qiang many times and he was aware of his capabilities too. He knew his son Ming Rusheng well and he was aware that if Ming Rusheng concentrated on business he can take it even further.

Till this moment, Ming Yusheng allowed his son to enjoy his life the way he wanted as not wanting to pressurize him for anything. He thought in future he had to handle business in any way so let him enjoy his heart content but now it was the time for him to be serious.

Ming Rusheng was a bright and very talented student who studied in one of the top universities in the world, in USA but after completing his education and coming back to China, he didn't give attention much to the business as his father too never forced him.

Ming Yusheng was aware of the power that Lu Qiang held and the way everyone respected him. Also the respect Lu Jinhai received from others because of having such a capable person as his son was something that Yusheng wished for too, so he decided to ask his son to concentrate on the family business.

Ming Industries was even older than Lu Corporation and equally powerful as Lu Corporation. Both companies never participated in the same business project bidding. They never tried to cross each other's sectors and path and it was the unsaid rule from both sides.

281 I Will Be The King Here...

Ming Industries was older and it was equally powerful as it Lu corporations. Both companies never participated in the same business project bidding. They never tried to cross each other's sectors and path and it was the unsaid rule from both sides.

Ming Rusheng understood his father and why he suddenly wanted him to focus on the business. Ming Rusheng was happy as he had the same goal. He wanted to be a more successful and powerful person than Lu Qiang.

"I know father what you are thinking and trust me from now on I am going to do my best that I never did before," Ming Rusheng replied with the determination to do something this time.

Ming Yusheng was happy to hear it and said calmly, "That's like my son."

Ming Rusheng had serious expressions on his face and was thinking what to do next just then Ming Yusheng spoke again, "But, you have to keep one thing in your mind."

Ming Rusheng looked at his father with a questioning gaze and asked, "And what is that father?"

"There are few rules we follow diligently in Ming Industries and one of them is not to cross paths with Lu Corporation and not to have any kind of business relations with them," Ming Yusheng replied.

"I don't want to have any kind of relationship with any Lu or the Lu Corporation," Ming Rusheng replied.

"That's good to....."

"But about crossing the path, it might happen, father because to get the success you have to overtake someone and Right Now Lu Corporation is the only thing I can see ahead of us."

Ming Rusheng spoke even before his father could show how glad he was to hear his son's previous words.

Hearing it Ming Yusheng was not happy and warned his son, "No Ming Rusheng! This is the unsaid rule and we, I mean Mings and Lus are following them for more than the last two decades. We don't want any kind of relationship with them, not even a rivalry."

"But Father..."

"No more word Ming Rusheng. In this case, I won't listen to you because this is the only way to maintain peace between two families and I don't want us to do anything to disturb that peace." Ming Yusheng was firm on his decision to follow what he was doing for so many years. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

Ming Rusheng gave out a deep sigh and said, "Hmm! Okay, father!"

Ming Rusheng didn't want to argue with his father knowing that it was not possible to convince him or his grandfather. He just decided to do things according to his father's wish for now and to wait for the future to do what he wanted.

When Ming Rusheng was thinking about it, his father spoke again. "I can understand you Ming Rusheng as I was just like you when we had a conflict with Lus but I respected my father's wish and stopped myself.

Ming Yusheng then paused and came out of his thoughts to look at his son and said as he was warning him again, "I wish you to do the same, Ming Rusheng."

Ming Rusheng looked at his father as the first time he was speaking something related to the past. He nodded to what his father asked him to do and replied, "Yes, Father."

Hearing 'yes' from his son, Ming Yusheng continued and said, "My father hates Lus but he won't ever want to have any conflicts with them or hurt them. He won't be happy if we did something and affect Lu Corporation so he separated his path

from theirs to not cross it again. Somewhere father still missed his friend elder Lu Huan.”

Ming Rusheng was listening to his father and said, “But the friendship was between elders and the hate too belongs to them. We can just do the business what we should do even if we cross the path with them.”

“I understand your point Ming Rusheng but still my answer is ‘No’ because my father’s wish is more important for me than anything.”

Ming Yusheng respected and loved his father as the elder Ming Shihong was a great person as well a very good father. He was already hurt because of his daughter’s death and even after the two decades of her death, he was not able to come out of it. Since that day, the elder Ming locked his soul somewhere inside and he looked like he was alive just for the sake of living.

Ming Yusheng missed his fun-loving and always laughing father. Whatever he tried he was not able to make his father like before so he decided, if he can’t make his father happy then he won’t ever make him sad and he always tried to be a filial and obedient son.

Ming Rusheng was aware of how his father felt like when it came to his grandfather. “I know father and for me, grandpa’s wish is important too so rest assured for now but in future, I can’t guarantee you.”

Hearing it, Ming Yusheng tried to warn his son again and said, “I hope you will keep business things limited to business only and you won’t take it to personal matters.”

“I will keep it in mind father,” Ming Rusheng replied to assure his father but he had his own plans in his mind that he wanted to start working on as soon as possible.

Excusing himself, Ming Rusheng went to his own office which was on the top floor of the building and it was reserved for only him. getting out of the lift on the top floor, the receptionist there greeted them. though he didn’t visit the office often, it was maintained as if he came there daily.

instead of his office, Ming Rusheng went at the end of the corridor of the floor. He stood in the huge gallery at the end with his hands tucked in his pants pocket. From there he could see the whole city under his nose.

Looking at the view of the whole city and feeling the cold breeze against his face, Ming Rusheng closed his eyes, took a deep breath and said, “Soon I will be the King here.”

282 Kissing Her Like Crazy...

In the evening, Lu Qiang came to receive Jiang Yuyan and this time he had to drop her to Jiang residence because soon her parents were going back from China and they wanted to spend more time with their daughter before the departure. Lu Qiang came to receiver her without a driver, driving the car by himself.

It was Lu Qiang's fixed schedule to call Jiang Yuyan during her lunchtime and to drop a message before coming to pick her up but this time the whole day he didn't call or message her. Jiang Yuyan was worried not to see any call or message from him. Moreover, she remembered when he left after dropping her to the university, his face was serious and she was in deep thought as to think about what might have happened.

When Jiang Yuyan came out of the gate of the university with two bodyguards following her, Lu Qiang was already present there, parking his car exactly in front of the gate. All the students were looking at the black luxury car parked in front of the gate and most of them could guess whom that car belonged to.

Seeing her, Lu Qiang lowered the window glass on his side but didn't look at her and started the engine. One bodyguard opened the car door for her in a hurry. Jiang Yuyan didn't fail to notice the cold expressions on Lu Qiang's face and the change in his behavior. She immediately sat in the car while both bodyguards bowed to him.

As she sat comfortably in the car and put on the seatbelt, Lu Qiang moved the car. On the way to the Jiang residence, Lu Qiang didn't talk anything and Jiang Yuyan was puzzled to see why he was behaving like this and what might have happened.

She tried to talk to him by telling him the things in the university but his reaction was limited to only "Hmm!" and

when she asked him the questions about him, his answers were only in a single word or in 'yes' or 'no'.

Jiang Yuyan finally gave up and preferred to be silent thinking he might be trying to concentrate on the driving or must be in thought of something important in the office. She could sense that he was driving a bit rashly and looked upset with something.

Lu Qiang hardly behaved like this in front of her but whenever he behaved like this, it always made her nervous. She just gulped and swallowed the words she wanted to say and stayed silent peeking glances at his cold face, all the way till they reach to Jiang Residence. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

Soon they reached the parking lot of the basement of the building of Jiang residence. Lu Qiang parked the car and turned off the engine. Both unbuckled the seat belts with Jiang Yuyan still having puzzled expressions on her face while Lu Qiang was still having those same cold expressions.

The moment Jiang Yuyan touched the door handle to open the door, Lu Qiang held her arm to stop her and pulled her towards him with a light tug. It startled her and before she could understand anything, Lu Qiang kissed her but this time the kiss was harsh and she couldn't get the chance to react to it.

He put his one hand on the backside of her neck to hold her at a place while his other hand was on her back to pull her towards him, not letting her move away from him. He kissed her like crazy as he was upset and taking it out on her.

Jiang Yuyan tried to keep it up with his pace but she couldn't as he was not giving her any chance to do her part, dominating every bit of her.

Sucking and nibbling her lips harshly, he slipped his tongue in her cavern and tasted her, leaving her breathless and leaving her with the thought of what might have happened to him.

Jiang Yuyan had no chance to do anything in front of this strong man but she could only let him kiss her without resisting him till the moment he felt content with it. Suddenly, she remembered, something like this had happened before when he kissed her harshly like this and that moment too, he was upset with her.

Before Jiang Yuyan's mind could process further Lu Qiang pushed one button in the car beside the seat. The next moment, the backrest of the seat on which Jiang Yuyan was sitting moved back. Without parting away from her delicate lips, Lu Qiang hovered over her pushing her back in the seat.

Being on top of her, Lu Qiang pinned both hands above her head while still kissing her and not giving her a chance to breathe for a single moment. He was using his teeth more than his lips and his tongue. He was biting and pulling out her lips out and made them swollen, being careful of not to make them bleed.

As he was on top of her, he started to explore her body with his one hand while the other one was still holding her hands above her head. He moved his hand from her back to her chest touching each and every inch of her skin.

Soon Lu Qiang realized, Jiang Yuyan was out of breath and her face was red. The moment he parted away, Jiang Yuyan gasped deeply. With her eyes closed, she was trying to get as much air she could take in her lungs. Her head was dizzy due to lack of oxygen and her eyes were moist.

Seeing her struggling like this, Lu Qiang let go of her hands moved back from her chest to let her breath comfortably and waited for her to be calm. Once she was done, she opened her eyes to look at him. Her eyes looked full of a question.

She was not upset with him with what he just did with her but she wanted to know the reason. Lu Qiang understood her unspoken question and said in his cold voice, "From next time, you don't have to ask for anyone if the person didn't come."

283 Drama Queen Yang...

Jiang Yuyan was not upset with Lu Qiang for what he just did with her but she wanted to know the reason behind his sudden rough behavior with her. Lu Qiang understood her unspoken question and said in his cold voice, "From next time, you don't have to ask or feel worried for anyone if the person didn't come."

First, she couldn't get what he exactly meant but the next moment she understood, he was talking about when she asked Ming Lan that why her brother didn't come. The same thing happened when on the first day of the university, Ming Rusheng offered her to drop at Lu Mansion when Lu Qiang was late to get to her. She understood him and nodded to what he said, agreeing to his demand

Seeing her understanding him and nodding in agreement, Lu Qiang's cold expressions changed to a normal one. He caressed her swollen lips with his thumb and asked, "Can I go for more?"

This sudden change in him startled Jiang Yuyan as thinking this man was cold a moment before and now suddenly he was looking calm and his voice was gentle too. She continued looking at him like she was in a daze, so Lu Qiang asked again, "Can I?"

She came back to her senses and finally reacted. "Huh? But we are in the car and....."

"After this, we won't be together for a few more days till your parents are here so....."

Before Lu Qiang could say anything more, Jiang Yuyan pulled him towards her by holding his collar and sealed his lips. With his lips covered by hers, Lu Qiang smiled and the corner of his lips looked curved up. With his lips touching to hers and feeling each other's hot breath against their skin, Lu Qiang spoke, "It's really difficult to stop when you act boldly like this."

“Who is asking you to stop?” Jiang Yuyan replied and bit his lips which surprised him.

Lu Qiang felt pain but it was a sweet pain that made him want to kiss her even more. “Is that so?” saying it he kissed her back. This time he was not harsh. The kiss was the passionate one shared equally by both of them. Kissing and nibbling each other’s lips, both rolled their tongues in sync to taste their sweetness.

After sharing a passionate kiss, both parted away while panting heavily. Still, it was not enough for Lu Qiang and he moved to her neck. As he started kissing her on her neck and as she opened her lips to give out a light moan in a reflex to the touch of his warm lips, they heard the loud horn of a car. They ignored it and continued doing their thing but they heard it again and looked like it was for them

Jiang Yuyan felt it was the familiar sound of a horn and exclaimed with her eyes opened widely, “Brother Yang!”

Hearing this name, Lu Qiang gave out a deep sigh, pinched the space between his eyebrows and said annoyingly, “This moron.”

Against his will, Lu Qiang stopped and got off from Jiang Yuyan. Going back to his seat he helped Jiang Yuyan to and looked at the car parked beside his car. Lu Qiang lowered down the window glass and looked at Jiang Yang who was sitting in his car looking at him with the mischievous smile on his face.

Lu Qiang stepped out of the car closing the door annoyingly and at the same time, Jiang Yang stepped out of his car too. Lu Qiang went to him and asked in a serious tone, “What?”

For Jiang Yang, seeing Lu Qiang annoyed and angry was the best sight to see and he replied playfully. “What? What?”

“Do you have something to say that you pressed the horn so many times?” Lu Qiang asked.

Jiang Yang behaved like he didn’t understand what Lu Qiang meant and replied, “Nope! I was just checking the horn if it is working properly or not.”

“You...” Lu Qiang didn’t know what to say to him, though he was aware of Jiang Yang’s intentions. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

Seeing Lu Qiang frustrated was not enough fun for Jiang Yang and he said further, “But the way you came out of the car immediately, I think the horn is working really fine.”

Hearing it, Lu Qiang was pissed off and almost felt like to kill Jiang Yang at the very moment but he controlled saying, “A** H**!”

Jiang Yang was enjoying it and asked with innocent expressions on his face, “Why? What happened? Is everything okay between you and my sister that you looked angry.”

“Everything is fine but I think you won’t be fine after this.” Saying it Lu Qiang was almost ready to punch him just then Jiang Yuayn who was sitting inside the car, feeling embarrassed to see her brother, stepped out and went to them.

Sensing her getting out of the car to come to them, Lu Qiang retreated his hand which gave Jiang Yang one more chance to tease Lu Qiang. Just as she reached them, he spoke, “Thank god sister you came early or I might have been dead by now. Your man is dangerous.”

Jiang Yuyan knew what was going there and she said, “Come out of your drama queen mode brother.”

Suddenly Jiang Yang turned from his pitiful and scared act to his detective mode and said, “Wait! Let me see.” Saying it he started to observe Jiang Yuyan’s face. He noticed her swollen lips and said while turning his sight from her lips to Lu Qiang, “So, after assaulting my delicate sister, were you trying to do the same with me.”

“Brother!” Jiang Yuyan exclaimed to hear her shameless brother but who could stop him and he said further, “Don’t worry sis. As I am here you don’t have to be scared.”

Hearing it Lu Qiang asked, “Really, Jiang Yang?” and looked at him with a serious expression on his face with his one eyebrow raised up in a question.

284 Calling Him Brother-In-Law...

“Don’t worry sis. As I am her you don’t have to be scared,” Jiang Yang said patting Jiang Yuyan’s head.

Hearing it Lu Qiang felt even more annoyed and he said, “Really?” and looked at him with a serious expression on his face with his one eyebrow raised up in a question.

“Yeah!” Jiang Yang replied but before he could say anything further, Lu Qiang pulled Jiang Yuyan closer to him and kissed her the very moment in front of Jiang Yang, leaving him flabbergasted.

Jiang Yuyan didn’t expect Lu Qiang to do this but when he did, she didn’t resist as trusting his decision to kiss her in front of her brother. Also, if her brother could be shameless enough to talk boldly then why not to be like him.

“Ohh! This single soul can’t handle this.” Saying it he turned around to look in another direction.

Lu Qiang kissed her for a while more and asked once they parted away, “Did you like it?”

“Hmm!” she nodded as saying yes so he spoke again, “I want to continue but I am afraid one single soul here might die with dog food overeating.

Jiang Yang turned to look back at them and said, “Thank you so much for caring about me my dear, brother-in-law.”

Hearing Jiang Yang calling him brother-in-law, Lu Qiang had a light smile on his face which Jiang Yang didn’t fail to notice it and said, “So, to bring the smile on this ice-cold face, I have to call you brother-in-law all the time right?”

“I won’t mind it,” Lu Qiang replied.

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh and said, “Man, don’t expect me to give you so much respect. You will be always Lu Qiang

for me.”

Lu Qiang liked Jiang Yang as his friend even more because he was the one to bring old days back in their lives and four friends were finally together again like in their childhood days. The hope that Lu Qiang lost long back, Jiang Yang brought it back to life by bringing Lu Feng closer to him again.

Even if Jiang Yang annoyed them with his shameless mouth, that shamelessness was the thing to bring everything back to life and the day when he will stop doing it, everything would be lifeless again.

Knowing how important this friend was in their lives, Lu Qiang spoke, “I am fine with you calling me anything as long as you are always with us.”

It was the first time when Lu Qiang said something this heavy and full of emotions, though he said it in his usual cold way. Jiang Yuyan was happy to hear it from Lu Qiang because she was aware of the importance of her brother’s presence in her life as well as in others’ lives.

Jiang Yang was surprised to hear it as instead of getting annoyed, Lu Qiang was making him feel heavy in the heart and he said, “Saying these heavy words, are you planning to give a heart attack to this cardiologist? Do you know how much I work hard to keep my heart healthy?”

Even the way he wanted to show how much he was touched with the words and how emotional he felt, it was always in a funny way instead of being serious.

Lu Qiang had a smile on his face to see his best friend acting all awkward because of what he said. Though Jiang Yang was good at handling others, he was not able to handle such emotional and heavy meaning words from his friend. He always avoided showing his emotional side, hiding it behind his smile.

“I don’t want your patients to curse me so I take my words back,” Lu Qiang said, coming back from his serious mode and being sarcastically again.

Hearing it Jiang Yang felt relieved and said, “Hmm! That’s better.”

It was a time for Lu Qiang to go back as he left Jiang Yuyan to her brother and said, “I will leave now.”

Hearing it Jiang Yuyan was not happy while Jiang Yang asked, “Are you not coming upstairs?”“Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

“Next time! I will leave now.”

“Okay, then see you.” Jiang Yang then looked at his sister and said, “I will be waiting at the elevator and left.

Jiang Yuyan nodded having sad expressions on her face. Once Jiang Yang left, Lu Qiang hugged her and said, “Just a few more days and we would be back together again.”

Jiang Yuyan too hugged him and said, “I know but I will miss you.”

“Don’t worry; suddenly you might see me beside you in a bed.”

“Huh?”

“You never know.”

“I will wait for you.”

After talking for a while, Lu Qiang left and Jiang Yuyan went to the elevator where her brother was waiting for her.”

As she reached there, Jiang Yang pressed the button to call the elevator and as it came both entered inside it. Jiang Yuyan was standing silently that Jiang Yang noticed and said, “Don’t be so sad. If he will get to know you are missing him badly, he will come and take you back with him without waiting for a single moment.”

“I am not sad, I am just...”

“I know the moment he left, you started to miss him.” Before she could say it, he spoke.

Jiang Yuyan gave out a deep sigh and said, “Hmm! I will try not to do so.”

Jiang Yang turned to look at her while standing with the support of the wall of the elevator and said, “You can’t help it as you are madly in love with him and you know why it is like this?”

“Why?” she asked curiously.

Jiang Yang smiled mischievously as he was ready to pull her leg again and asked, “Do you really want to hear it.”

“Yes!” she replied being unaware of her brother’s intentions as she was immersed in the thoughts of her man.

“Don’t hit me after listening to it. You are the one who is asking and I am answering. So.....”

285 Pissed Off Lu Qiang....

Hearing her brother, Jiang Yuyan asked, “Okay! So if we do that thing, then I won’t miss him that much. Is it like this?”

Jiang Yang smiled mischievously to hear it as he”Don’t hit me after listening to it. You are the one who is asking and I am just answering. So...”

“Tell me what it is, brother?” Jiang Yuyan was impatient and wanted to hear the reason.

“Both of you are yet to do the whole thing so your bodies longed for each other and you end up missing each other badly,” Jiang Yang replied being ready to see her reaction.

“Cough-Cough! It’s not like this,” Jiang Yuyan denied it. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

“Hmm! What can I do when you don’t want to accept it?” Jiang Yang was enjoying seeing her embarrassed.

As he was able to catch a fish in a net, he said again, “Wrong! If you do it once you will crave for each other even more like crazies and you will miss him more than how much you are missing him right now”

“What?” she exclaimed as she was not expecting to hear it.

“Yes!” he replied.

“Then your first statement doesn’t make any sense,” Jiang Yuyan said seriously but her brother was in a mood to have fun.

“When did I ever speak the things that make sense?” Saying it Jiang Yang laughed that annoyed her and she said, “You will never change, brother.”

“Do you want me to?” He asked.

“No! Even if you are annoying, I like you the way you are.” Saying it, Jiang Yuyan had a smile on her face. She was

annoyed but she loved her brother more than anything.

Both annoyed, teased and even quarreled most of the time with each other but the way their relationship was, it was the best relationship between one brother and a sister and both were blessed to have it in their lives.

After dinner in Lu Mansion's garden....

Lu Lijun was drawing a night view of the garden with his favorite place in it, the patio. He looked totally immersed in it being unaware of what was happening around him. Since he was a kid, he had a habit to do everything with a full concentration and he never left that thing until he achieved it and felt satisfied with his achievement. Other than being overly possessive towards the people he loved, he had these qualities too.

Lu Qiang was searching for him as for the past few days he was not able to give him time. Getting to know from the butler that Lu Lijun was in a garden, Lu Qiang went to him and saw what he was drawing, standing behind him silently.

Lu Feng was in a garden too, talking on his cell phone to someone. Seeing Lu Lijun and Lu Qiang, he stepped towards them, once he finished the call. When Lu Qiang saw Lu Feng, he signaled him not to make a sound.

Both brothers were standing behind their younger brother to see what he was drawing just then Lu Lijun realized their presence and turned his head to look at them. "When did both of you come?"

"Just when you were way too busy to notice the things other than your drawing." Said Lu Qiang.

"What are you drawing with so much concentration, Lu Lijun?" Lu Feng asked.

"I am trying to draw a perfect night view of our garden for the past few days but every time it seems like, something is lacking and I can't get what it is," he said while observing his drawing carefully.

"Let me see!" Lu Qiang offered to see it and once Lu Lijun handed him over the drawing he replied, "It is beautiful and I

can't see what is lacking in it.”

Saying it, he passed the drawing to Lu Feng who was eager to see it too. Lu Feng went through it and said, “Yes! it is really beautiful. Our Younger brother is really talented.”

“No brother, both of you can't see it, but in that drawing, something is lacking as it looks lifeless and I can't feel it.”
Saying it he asked his drawing back and said, “Let me draw for some time more and I will try to fix it.”

In that drawing, there was a night view of a patio with darkness around it but it was visible because of the deem light coming from the lamps.

Knowing how serious Lu Lijun was with his work and his dedication towards it until he finished it, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng decided to leave him alone for some time and moved to take a stroll together.

Once they came away from Lu Lijun, Lu Feng spoke while walking along with Lu Qiang, “Today there was a chaos in the office, I heard,”

“Xiao Min! Need to make him strict a bit as nowadays he is being a chatterbox,” Lu Qiang replied.

Lu Qiang went back to Lu Corporation after dropping Jiang Yuayn to the university. On the way, in his car, he was thinking about what Jiang Yuyan asked Ming Lan. He didn't like it and he was greatly bothered by it.

When he reached Lu Corporation, employees were excited to see him being ready to congratulate him on his engagement.

As he entered the main door of the building, Xiao Min went to his boss while all were present there with wide smiles on their faces being happy for their boss.

There was a big banner with “Congratulations president Lu For getting engaged” written on it and all were carrying beautiful bouquets in their hands.

Seeing the view in front, the already cold Lu Qiang felt even more annoyed and said to Xiao Min, “Seems like you all are short for work and have more free time nowadays.”

Seeing the totally opposite reaction of their boss instead of feeling happy, all felt scared because the day when Lu Qiang was pissed off, it was like the death sentence for all the employees and the same happened that day.

286 King In The Future...

Seeing the totally opposite reaction of their boss instead of feeling happy, all the employees felt scared because the day when Lu Qiang was pissed off, it was like the death sentence for all the employees and the same happened that day.

Everyone was working like horses in the race, without taking a break to drink water even. Continuous meetings and files going to trashing was the usual scene for them and they were ready to face it. That day too Lu Qiang missed his lunch and employees had to miss it too because of the pile of work.

Xiao Min was worried and he called Lu Feng as knowing, Lu Feng and Lu Qiang were back together again and asked what happened to his boss. Xiao Min had seen both the brothers since they were kids as he was the son of Lu Jinhai's assistant and he was aware of most of the things in the Lu Mansion. Though he was Lu Qiang's assistant, he used to talk to Lu Feng too because of the childhood relationship.

“Don't blame poor Xiao Min. He was worried to think about what might have happened to you.” Smiling with the thought of something Lu Feng spoke again, “You know, Xiao Min is like your unofficial wife who keeps caring about you all the time.”

Lu Qiang didn't smile and replied coldly, “Need to teach the wife what should not suppose to be done.” Saying it he looked at Lu Feng and said, “I want you to have such unofficial wife too but you are the one who doesn't want it.”

Hearing it, Lu Feng stopped in his tracks and looked at Lu Qiang who turned to look at Lu Feng. Lu Qiang was expecting this reaction from Lu Feng and he was ready to hear what he was going to say.

“Coming once to the Lu Corporation by breaking my strong resolution of so many years, doesn't mean that I want to join it.”

Lu Feng looked way too serious with what he was saying and it was the topic he never wanted to discuss with anyone. He didn't want to say why he was not willing to come to Lu Corporation when it was his dream to run it successfully like his uncle Lu Jinhai.

Lu Qiang didn't feel bad to hear Lu Feng saying it, as he was ready for such a cold reaction from him. He was aware that Lu Feng came to Lu Corporation after so many years just for the sake of Jiang Yuyan as she was not well and his love and worry for her made him break his determination. Still, Lu Qiang was happy that he at least stepped into Lu Corporation.

"Let's go!" Said Lu Feng to look at Lu Qiang as he knew Lu Qiang understood him.

Lu Qiang nodded and both walked to complete the whole circular path in the garden which ended where they started to walk, the place where Lu Lijun was sitting.

Suddenly Lu Feng asked, "So what happened to piss you off and to create chaos in the office?"

"It was nothing." Lu Qiang replied as not wanting to answer it. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

"Really? I can guess it had something to do with Jiang Yuyan," Lu Feng said.

"Hmm!" Lu Qiang nodded.

"What was it?" Lu Feng asked again.

Lu Qiang didn't want to bring it out again but as Lu Feng asked him again, he told him what happened.

Finally, they were back together as friends so Lu Qiang didn't want to take away his right to know everything about him as his friend.

Hearing the reason behind Lu Qiang's devilish behavior in the office, Lu Feng laughed "Haha! It's so like you."

Saying it, he looked at Lu Lijun who was still busy in his work while sitting on the bench, far away from them and said,

“Look at him so calm like still water in a lake but you know how he reacts when he is possessive, like a typhoon in a sea.”

“I know” Lu Qiang replied while looking at Lu Lijun.

Lu Feng was observing that calm looking Lu Lijun and said, “Now you know from where that quality in him came from,”

“Huh?” Lu Qiang didn’t understand where he was pointing.

Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang who had a questioning expression on his face and said while looking into his eyes, “It’s from you, Lu Qiang, but he is just a higher and a stronger version of you.”

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Lijun and thought about what Lu Feng said and asked to make it sure again, “Is it?”

Lu Feng nodded and said, “Now, never say he is over possessive as you are not different from him.”

“I never realized it,” Lu Qiang was still in shock to think about it.

“It’s fine, Lu Qiang. Any way Lu Lijun had everything similar to you from his looks, his habits, his likings and disliking, so behaving just like you is not surprising,”

“Hmm! Right!” Lu Qiang agreed.

Lu Feng spoke again, “When he would be a grown-up man, he would be like you and we will get two Lu Qiang in our home.”

“He would be better than me. I see the future of Lu Corporation in his hands,” Lu Qiang was aware of capabilities of Lu Lijun which were hiding for time being.

“Hmm! Right! He is actually better than us all and he is a future king of our home too.”

Both were standing at a distance, looking at the busy little guy who was going to be the future of Lus and the most powerful guy in the future.

Talking about the things from here and there, both reached to where Lu Lijun was sitting. Realizing his brothers were back, Lu Lijun showed them a drawing that he finally finished having a wide smile on his face.

“See, I finally finished it and it looks like it has a life in It,” he said while holding a drawing in front of his both brothers to show it to them.

If we are in top 20 this week, I won't go for a privileged subscription this month and I won't add more chapters in it other than the 20 chapters already there (I can't get them out from the system as they are already set)

instead of privileged, I will go for a mass release for you guys. It would be a loss for me as I won't be able to earn money from privileged subs but I want a better ranking instead of money. If ranking won't improve then I have to go for a privileged system this month too.

If I won't go for a privileged system, then I would be able to do multiple mass releases for you...

287 Drawing A Future Again....

“See, I finally finished it and now it looks like it has a life in It,” Lu Lijun said while holding a drawing in front of his both brothers to show it to them

The drawing was the same but Lu Lijun added a few more things in it. Instead of showing a simple dark night, he drew rain in it with lightning in the sky. A man is standing in a patio showing his back view. Along with it, there was one woman who looked like drenched in the rain while standing outside of the patio and she was looking at the man who was standing while facing his back towards her.

Lu Lijun drew only the back view of the man and a woman but he didn't draw their faces. Lu Feng took the drawing from him and looking at the picture, he asked, “Who are these, the man and a woman?”

“I don't know. I just continued drawing and it came out like this,” Lu Lijun replied.

Getting a drawing from, Lu Qiang observed the woman in the drawing carefully and said, “She is looking like Yuyan. Her hair, the way she is standing and her back view.”
Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

“Really?” Saying it, Lu Feng too looked at the drawing in Lu Qiang's hands and said again “Hmm! You are right. As now Li Lijun likes her, he can use her as his muse for his art.”

“Yuyan? But I didn't think about her when I drew it. It just came out like this. I didn't know I was drawing her.” Lu Lijun was surprised to hear it.

“But it's a good drawing Lu Lijun,” Lu Feng said looking at the drawing with something bothering him.

“If that girl is Yuyan then that man is elder brother Lu Qiang,” saying it Lu Lijun started to collect his drawing stuff on the bench in his bag.

“Lu Lijun is right. This man is definitely you, standing like this with your hands tucked in pant’s pockets and sleeves folded upward. It’s just your style,” Lu Feng said but still, there was something that was bothering him.

Even though the man in that image was facing his back towards them, they could clearly guess the way he was standing. Lu Qiang too agreed to see it and said, “It seems like I made her sad.”

Lu Feng agreed and said, “She is standing in a rain looking at you and you are not aware of it. She is sad that’s why I am getting sad vibes from this drawing.”

Now Lu Feng understood what was bothering him but still, he thought there was something more to it and said, “There is something that I am feeling in my heart to see this drawing but I am not able to understand what it is.”

“Don’t think too much. It is just a drawing made by Lu Lijun, not the reality,” Said Lu Qiang to that Lu Feng agreed and said, “You are right.”

Hearing his both brothers, Lu Lijun said, “Or she might be searching for elder brother and finally found you in the patio.”

“It looks like it.” said Lu Feng while going through the drawing carefully again, and then he looked at Lu Qiang and said, “you are not allowed to hurt her and leave her in this condition searching for you like crazy. Once was enough.”

That once Lu Feng motioned was the day of Wang Peng’s engagement when Jiang Yuyan was searching for Lu Qiang and she was almost at the verge of breaking down. Lu Feng was aware of it and he didn’t want her to suffer like that again.

“Yup! She is a nice person elder brother. You are not allowed to hurt her,” said Lu Lijun after gathering his stuff and putting it into a bag.

“I won’t!” Lu Qiang replied and gave that drawing back to Lu Lijun.

Once again, Lu Lijun unintentionally drew his own future which was going to turn the course of his and Jiang Yuyan's life.

In Jiang residence...

Jiang Yuyan and Jiang Yang said goodnight to their parents and went to their rooms. While walking on the stairs, Jiang Yang asked, "Does something happen between you and Lu Qiang?"

"No! Why?" Jiang Yuyan casually asked as not knowing why her brother was suddenly asking this.

"Well! Lu Qiang was in his devil form again and made all the employees suffered in hell for the whole day."

Jiang Yuyan was surprised to hear it. "Huh? Why? I mean what happened?"

"That, only both of you know. One thing is sure; he only acts like this when he is very upset. Nowadays there is only one person who can affect him to this extent and that is you, my little sister."

"Was he acting like the day when we both went to his office?"

Jiang Yuyan asked to remember the day when she and Lu Qiang fought and he was in a bad mood that troubled the whole Lu Corporation.

Jiang Yang nodded and said, "Hmm! It seems like it from the phone call made by Xiao Min to Lu Feng and I was with Lu Feng at that moment as he was around the hospital and came to see me."

"Ohh! I didn't know. Poor employees."

When both finally reached the first floor, they stopped in the passage as the conversation was not over yet.

"What happened that made him again like this? Both of you looked good when he left you here with your swollen lips." Though Jiang Yang was serious, it was hard for him to stop talking about funny things.

Jiang Yuyan avoided the funny part and said, "That! Umm! I think he is a bit possessive so he reacted this way."

Jiang Yang knew Lu Qiang better and said, “Possessive? Hmm! He is and he is dangerous when he is like that.”

“I got to know this during these few months,” said Jiang Yuyan but she was not worried about it.

288 Accepting Him The Way He Is...

Jiang Yuyan avoided the funny part her brother mentioned and said, “That! Umm! I think he is a bit possessive so he reacted this way.”

Jiang Yang knew Lu Qiang better and said, “Possessive? Hmm! He is and he is dangerous when he is like that.”

“I got to know this during these few months,” said Jiang Yuyan but she was not worried about it.

“He is more possessive about you because he waited for you so long and he was being too patient to have you in his life. Now you are with him finally, he doesn’t want to share you with anyone. He wants all of you for himself only. That is how he is.” Jiang Yang gave her sister a reason behind Lu Qiang’s action and that sounded valid to her.

“So?” But Jiang Yuyan didn’t know how to react to it.

“So? Haha! Don’t worry. It’s all fine. Even if he is possessive, there are other people to suffer, for example, his employees.”

Jiang Yang then looked at his sister who was having puzzled expressions on her face. He had that usual mischievous smile on his face and said, “And about you..umm... you will just end up having swollen lips like today.”

She didn’t get angry to listen to her brother’s words and said, “Well! It’s not that bad. I like the way he acted with me when he is upset and possessive. it gives me a feeling of belonging to him only. Also, However he is, I love him a lot, brother and I am ready to accept him in every way.”

“That’s like my lovely sister.” Saying it Jiang Yang patted her head and said, “Sleep now, it’s getting late.” Jiang Yang knew there was nothing to worry about. He was also sure about the thing that his sister would be happy with Lu Qiang only No one could love her as much as Lu Qiang did.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “Goodnight, brother!” Then both went to their rooms.

The next day, Jiang yang dropped Jiang Yuayn to the university where Lu Qiang was waiting for her.

After talking with Lu Qiang for a while and leaving his sister to him, Jiang Yang left for the hospital.

When he reached there, an emergency was waiting for him. It was a middle-aged woman from one reputable and rich and powerful family in the capital. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

The woman had a sudden heart problem and Jiang Yang had to take the case in his hands. The patient was a lady from the Xi family, the powerful and the famous family.

After leaving the university, on the way to the hospital, Jiang Yang already got the message from the hospital that there was an emergency and he had to rush to the hospital. Reading the message, Jiang Yang hurried and made it as fast as possible. On the call, he asked about the patient’s update and discussed a few things with doctors in the hospital. When he reached there all the testes were done and results were in front of the doctors.

Going through the tests and their results, Jiang Yang and the team of all the expert doctors decided to operate on the patient as there was a blockage in the coronary artery. Considering her the patient’s age and her past medical history, it was a critical case for the doctors. Though these kinds of cases were normal for them to handle, they were worried.

As the patient was a Vip person there was no chance they could do a single mistake in it. It was a normal surgery for all those expert doctors in the hospital but the pressure of having the patient from a powerful family and operating on her was like a stressful thing for them.

Jiang Yang never had these kinds of fears and he always gave importance to the patient without looking at where the patients came from and what the background they had. For him as a

doctor only one thing was important and that was to save the patient by any means. He had been following this attitude since he was in A states and he was famous for it.

Though he was younger to most of the doctors around him, in states or even in China, he was the most confident, successful and skilled doctor so all decided to hand over this surgery to him. They knew Jiang Yang will accept it and give his hundred percent to save and make that patient better.

Jiang Yang decided to operate on her and he had one more expert doctor as his assistant and they had a team including nurses and other doctors to operate as soon as possible.

When there was a time of the surgery and Jiang Yang was going to surgery room with his team while crossing the waiting area for the family members of the patient, his sight noticed someone familiar. He identified the person but before that person could notice him too, the family member of the patient came to him.

“Everything would be fine with her, right?” That was one older lady.

“We will try our best.” Saying it Jiang Yang left with the doctors, his sight again seeking a glips of the person sitting in a chair silently and looking at the floor.”

Jiang Yang smiled and went to the surgery room. It was a few hours longer surgery and it was successful. The patient was fine making everyone feel relaxed. The team congratulate each other and especially to the lead doctor of the surgery, Jiang Yang, though it was not a new thing for them to see Jiang Yang working efficiently.

When Jiang Yang came out of the surgery room with other doctors, the same old lady asked him about how the surgery went and Jiang Yang assured her that everything went fine and the patient was fine.

While talking to the old lady, Jiang Yang’s sight followed the place where the person known to him was sitting when he left for the surgery.

289 Doctor Jiang Yang...

When Jiang Yang came out of the surgery room with other doctors, the same old lady asked him about how the surgery went and Jiang Yang assured her that everything went fine and the patient was out of the danger too.

While talking to the old lady, Jiang Yang's sight followed the place where the person known to him was sitting when he left for the surgery room but no one was there. Once he was done talking and comforting the old lady, he left but his sight was searching the place around to find that one person.

The doctor with him noticed it asked, "Whom are you searching for?"

"Stopping to search for the person after hearing the fellow doctor, he replied, "No one, I just thought, I saw someone I know."

As surgery lasted for a longer time, it was a time past lunch so both the doctors went for lunch. While having lunch, again Jiang Yang felt that he saw the same person again but before he could take a proper look and go to say hi, again the person disappeared and he exclaimed, "What the"

Doctor with him heard it, though Jiang Yang said it in a very low voice and swallowed the last offensive word. He looked at Jiang Yang who was looking in the direction behind him and turned to see where Jiang Yang was looking at. He then asked, "What happened to make this sweet, civilized and talented doctor into an uncivilized person.

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh and said, "I think either my eyes are seeing things or my brain is damaged, doctor Shen." "Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

"The way you performed the surgery today, I think nothing is wrong with your eyes and your brain. I think something is

wrong with your heart if I am not wrong.” Doctor Shen had a teasing smile on his face.

“Well, I am not sure about my eyes and brain but I am sure that your eyes and brain are both working really fine,” said Jiang Yang and started to dig in a food.

In the next few hours, there was a doctor’s visit round to a patient. Going through a few patients, it was a turn to visit the lady from a Xi family. The patient was still in an ICU. After checking the patient when Jiang Yang came out of the ICU, he saw a person know to him again and he noticed, the person was talking to the older lady from the Xi family with whom he talked before and after the surgery.

That person looked sad, having a worried expression on the face. When Jiang Yang saw her sad, he felt sad too. He realized the person was the relative of the patient and asked the assistant doctor who was with him, “I didn’t see any man from the Xi family here to see the patient.”

“You are right sir. Only those two ladies are here since the patient came to the hospital,” The assistant doctor replied while looking at the only two family members of the patient.

“Hmm!” Saying it, Jiang Yang stepped to go back to his cabin with a puzzled expression on his face and the assistant doctor followed him along. Suddenly the assistant doctor spoke, “They are very rich people but most of the people are scared of them.”

“Why?” Jiang Yang asked being curious to know everything.

“They are scared of their power and the head of Xi family and his son,” the assistant replied.

“I see,” Jiang Yang replied and the assistant spoke again, “This was the reason, why no doctor here wanted to take this case in their hands and handed it to you though we have so many senior and skilled doctors her.”

“Is that so? Seems like, you know the things here more than me, though you are new here,” Jiang Yang had a smile on his face as he was not affected with this.

Even if he knew the reason and this fact why all the doctors wanted him to handle the case, he still had taken it in his hands.

At first, he was surprised to see why all the doctors were worried and it looked like this patient was very important for everyone but still, they preferred to hand it over to Jiang Yang. He had questions in his mind but ignored it because for him nothing was important than the patient.

The assistant felt a bit scared to hear what Jiang Yang said and spoke again, “N... Not just that, but they know how skilled you are and you can do it successfully, doctor Jiang Yang.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yang laughed and said, “Haha! You don’t have to be scared. I know how things worked here.”

The assistant gave out a sigh of relief to hear it and said, “You are the coolest doctor I have ever seen.”

“Thanx but don’t try to flatter me with skills in talking sweet, instead, do it with your skills in treating the patients.” Saying it Jiang Yang turned to enter into his cabin.

The assistant doctor stopped outside and said before Jiang Yang could enter his cabin, “I will doctor Jiang Yang as I am following your path.”

Jiang Yang turned to look at him with a smile on his face. “Sweet talker you are!” saying it Jiang Yang entered his cabin and closed the door.

When the work in the hospital finished, Jiang Yang left for the home. When he reached the parking lot of the mansion, one more car arrived there and it was the familiar one. A black Mayback, Lu Qiang’s car. As usual, Lu Qiang was doing his daily duty for his woman.

Both parked their cars and stepped out of it. Lu Qiang opened the door for Jiang Yuyan. Seeing his sister he said, “My sister is the luckiest person among us all.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with questioning sight while Lu Qiang replied, “Thanx for the complement Jiang Yang.”

“What was that?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

290 Warning The Friend...

Seeing his sister coming out of the car, Jiang Yang said, “My sister is the luckiest person among us all.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at her brother with questioning sight while Lu Qiang replied, “Thanks for the compliment, Jiang Yang.”

“Umm! What was that?” Jiang Yuyan asked as she didn’t understand what these both were talking about.

“The great president Lu, who gets everything ready in his hands, my sister has him as her driver and has him to take care of her. What more one could desire for, in this life.” Jiang Yang replied.

Lu Qiang was not affected by his words. He was calm and replied, “I don’t mind to be a driver or anything for her, Jiang Yang.”

Jiang Yuyan frowned to hear the word driver and said, “He is not my driver. He is my....”

“I know Yuyan, he is your love but having him is a great thing. Isn’t it?” Jiang Yang said knowing what his sister was about to say further.

“Yes! Because no one can love me as much as he does,” she replied feeling glad that she had Lu Qiang in her life.

“Huh?” Hearing it Jiang Yang looked at her with his eyebrow curved up to give a doubtful and questioning look.

“Don’t give me this look, brother as I am not talking about a siblings’ love. As a sibling, no one can ever love me as much as you do.” She said knowing why her brother had those expressions on his face. Also, for her having Jiang Yang as a brother was a blessing too. His presence in her life was the thing she wanted forever just as she wished to have Lu Qiang in her life forever.

Feeling satisfied with her reply, Jiang Yang replied, “Hmm! Then it’s fine.”

This time too Lu Qiang didn't want to go upstairs to Jiang residence as Jiang Yang was there to take her with him and said, "I will take a leave now."

Jiang Yang exclaimed to hear it and said, "No! Today you have to come upstairs as last time mom confronted both of us for not inviting you."

"I will come later," said Lu Qiang, still not wanting to go with them.

"Do you want our mother to roast us alive? That delicate and extremely beautiful woman is dangerous sometimes. Ask Yuyan if you don't trust me," saying it, he signaled Jiang Yuyan to tell him.

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and she nodded agreeing to her brother's words and looked like she was pleading him to come with them.

Lu Qiang accepted their invite and went upstairs. In a lift, Jiang Yang spoke again, "Enjoy the perks of being son-in-law, Lu Qiang."

Lu Qiang was standing beside Jiang Yuyan. He pulled her closer by placing his hands on her shoulder and said, "You too can enjoy it if you get a girl,"

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh and said, "I can just wish."

Seeing her brother, acting again, Jiang Yuyan spoke, "You have a girl. You just need to get her."

"Who?", Lu Qiang was surprised to hear it. Last time when Jiang Yuyan mentioned it, he forgot to ask.

"My friend, Nixxie. Brother Yang is interested in her," Jiang Yuyan replied while looking at her brother with a teasing smile.

Hearing it Lu Qiang's excitement to know about a girl whom Jiang Yang was interested in, went down and he has serious expressions on his face. As Jiang Yuyan was there, he didn't say anything but the change in his expressions was noticed by Jiang Yang while Jiang Yuyan was busy in teasing her brother.

When they entered the Jiang Residence, Mo Ruolan was happy to see Lu Qiang. After being officially engaged to Jiang Yuyan, it was the first time when he came to Jiang residence. Talking for a while, Jiang Yang excused to both the ladies and asked Lu Qiang to come with him. Lu Qiang was waiting for this too and stood up from the couch to go with Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan looked at both of them with questioning sight. Noticing her reaction, Jiang Yang replied, "Let me borrow your man for some time. Rest assured, I am not going to do anything with him as I can't betray my love Lu Feng with his own brother."

Hearing it both the ladies had smiles on their lips while Lu Qiang was calm as he was immune to Jiang Yang's jokes.

Jiang Yang always knew how to turn the situation into a funny one and escape it. Nodding to what her brother said, Jiang Yuyan said, "Okay! Go ahead. Till then I will go and get freshen up."

"That's like my sweet sister. Saying it he signaled Lu Qiang to come up with him. Both went upstairs to Jiang Yang's room and Jiang Yuyan went to her own room.

As they entered the room and Jiang Yang closed the door. Stepping towards the couch Jiang Yang removed his jacket and tossed it on the bed. Sitting lazily on the couch with serious expressions on his face, he asked to look at Lu Qiang while signaling him to sit, "What's the matter?"

"Lu Qiang sat on the couch and replied with a question, "About the girl Yuyan mentioned?"

"Hmm!" Jiang Yang nodded.

Lu Qiang stared into his eyes and said directly coming to the point, "If you are just interested in her, and there is nothing more to it, then forget about her."

"May I know the reason because Lu Feng too had the same reaction as yours and seems I desired for the forbidden fruit on the tree in the heavenly realm."

"Her family story is not easy to deal with and it's a bit complicated. I don't want you to be in any kind of trouble," Lu

Qiang replied.

Jiang Yang was not as much serious as Lu Qiang was and said, “How bad is it? Will they kill me?” “Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

“If they try to do it, I will destroy their whole clan.” Lu Qiang replied as he was not happy to hear Jiang Yang’s casual reply. He was worried about his friend as knowing the reality of that family.

291 Yes, I Am Lonely...

Jiang Yang was not as much serious as Lu Qiang, “How bad is it? Will they kill me?”

“If they try to do it, I will destroy their whole clan.” Lu Qiang replied as he was not happy to hear Jiang Yang’s casual reply. He was worried about his friend as knowing the reality of that family but his friend was not considering his worry for him.

“When I have you and Lu Feng, I don’t have to be worried about anything. Am I right?” asked Jiang Yang still having a smile on his face as not wanting to be serious.

Lu Qiang was getting annoyed as he was worried about him, “We are but when I am saying these people are not good and they can harm you, aren’t you able to understand the seriousness behind it.”

“I can understand how serious you are but throughout my whole life I was just being funny and now it’s time to be serious so I will try my best.”

“Do you have a death wish? Have you lost the motivation to live?” Lu Qiang knew Jiang Yang was aware of the situation when Lu Feng and he were asking him not to go for it.

“I don’t know it but I want to go for it even if the result is my death.” Saying it Jiang Yang closed his eyes.

“So you won’t listen and you want to go for it as it’s a challenge for you. Drinking too much was not enough? Are you that lonely?” Lu Qiang used harsh words this time.

“It was not but now it’s a challenge for me and yes I am lonely.” The way Jiang Yang said, he was alone, it made Lu Qiang feel bad, “We all are here for you Jiang Yang. You don’t need to feel lonely.”

“I know, Lu Qiang. I am glad to have you all in my life.” He always hid his problems, his worries, his loneliness behind his smile.

“I know you won’t listen and you always go for the things when others tell you not to do it. The more I will stop you the more you will try. You are such a moron!”

“Haha! You guys know me well. Lu Feng was like you too.”

His causal behavior to Lu Qiang’s serious one made Lu Qiang raise his voice, “I am serious Jiang Yang. If Lu Feng said the same thing, then try to understand it.”

“Okay-Okay! I will listen to you guys and I will try to stop myself.” Seeing Lu Qiang serious Jiang Yang stopped being stubborn and agreed to what he said.

Lu Qiang was aware that Jiang Yang was saying it to stop him from worrying but in the end, he will do what he wanted so he said calmly forgetting how annoyed he was a moment before, “But if you plan to do anything or if you have any kind of trouble then come to me first.”

Jiang Yang opened his eyes to look at Lu Qiang and said, “You both brothers never forget to say the same things to me, huh?”

Lu Qiang ignored what he said and warned him, “Keep in mind what I Just said, Jiang Yang.”

“As you say, my friend.” Jiang Yang was smiling to see worried Lu Qiang. He thought to change his mood, “Yuyan must be done with her things now. Go to her room, till then I will freshen up myself.”

“Are you trying to get me out from your room as you are full of the nagging from me?” Lu Qiang knew Jiang Yang’s intentions.

“You got me here. Well, I won’t call it nagging. It’s more of my friend is worrying about me but as I understood your point so I want you to go and spend some time alone with your love.”

“Hmm!” Lu Qiang just sighed. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

“Where will you find a brother like me who is allowing his sister’s fiancé to go to her room?” Jiang Yang was again being

himself.

Lu Qiang ignored his words and stood up from the couch. He stepped to the door and turned to look at Jiang Yang before going out, “No need to hurry. Take your time to freshen up” and stepped out.

“Don’t worry. I won’t disturb both of you.” Jiang Yuyan said loudly so that Lu Qiang who already stepped out of his room could hear it.

Lu Qiang heard Jiang Yang’s words and went to Jiang Yuyan’s room with a smile on his face.

Lu Qiang knocked on the door but there was no reply. He didn’t bother to knock again and straight away opened the door. Just as he stepped inside, Jiang Yuyan came out of the bathroom. Seeing someone suddenly in her room, she startled and exclaimed, “Omg!”

Hearing the sound of the bathroom’s door unlocking, Lu Qiang looked in its direction just to see the startled Jiang Yuyan. She was in her bathrobe and she was calming down herself by placing her hand on her chest.

Seeing her, Lu Qiang smiled and stepped towards her, “Did I scare you?”

“Hmm! She nodded.

“Come here,” saying it he hugged her and patted her back gently. “You should have a habit to see me like this as soon we are going to be together forever.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan smiled, “But I was not expecting you here and you came suddenly.” Lifting her head up she asked, “Was there anything serious, brother Yang and you talked about,”

“No! We just talked about a few normal things,” Lu Qiang didn’t want to tell her anything related to Nixxie yet as both were good friends and she was the only one close to Jiang Yuyan.

“Hmm! I will believe you but if there anything serious, promise me you won’t hide it from me as I know brother Yang

would never tell me about it.” Jiang Yuyan didn’t force him though she knew there was something and these men don’t want to tell her.

Tomorrow’s daily update would be late as I am going to give you more chapters as a mass release. for me, the time would be Sunday midnight (00:01) according to GMT+8 so you guys can calculate the time according to your country’s timing. Those chapters are in the writing process. Right now I have two chapters and I am trying to make it much more but let’s see how much I can write till tomorrow.. :)

292 What Are Your Plans?

“Hmm! I will believe you but if there anything serious, promise me you won’t hide it from me as I know brother Yang would never tell me about it.” Jiang Yuyan didn’t force him though she knew there was something and these men don’t want to tell her

The way these men suddenly excused and left, Jiang Yuyan had a doubt that something was there and these two were hiding. Also, she noticed that Lu Qiang didn’t ask anything further when she mentioned Nixxie’s name and he was not as excited when he asked, who the girl was.

“I will.” Assuring her, Lu Qiang’s sight moved from her eyes to her moist lips and skin as she just had a shower. There was a sudden change in his sight from the worried one to see her startled to the intense one to see her fresh from the shower.

Not wanting to wait for even a second, Lu Qiang kissed her gently to feel her soft lips while sucking and testing them. Jiang Yuyan too kissed him back but soon she realized the door was not locked, “Let me lock the door.”

“What are your plans?” he asked while tightening his grip around her waist as not wanting to let go her away from him.

“Huh?” she looked at him with a questioning gaze.

“If you are locking the door that means you have something more in your mind when I just wanted to kiss you,” he replied.

“No! I didn’t have any plan.. I...was....” Before she could explain it, Lu Qiang kissed her again and said, “I was teasing you.”

He let her go and asked to get ready. Jiang Yuyan pulled out the set of clothes from her wardrobe and looked at him, “I will go and change in a few minutes.”

“Where are you going?” he asked

She halted in her tracks towards the bathroom, “In the bathroom.”

“To change your clothes?”

“Hmm!” she nodded.

“Do you really need to, when I have seen you all, without a single piece of clothes on you.” Saying it he strode towards her.

“Cough-Cough! I was” She didn’t know what to say when she saw Lu Qiang coming to her.

Standing in front of her, he took clothes from her hands, “Let me help you.”

Hearing it, she gulped, “Huh? Help?”

He looked at her scared face, “Don’t let your imagination run wild. I am talking about to help you wear your clothes.”

“Ohh! But I can.....”

“It’s not the first time when I am helping you with this.” Saying it he pulled the knot on her bathrobe around her waist that made Jiang Yuyan swallow her words back and she stood still to allow him what he wanted to do.

He took her to the bed and put those clothes on it. As he started to pull down her bathrobe from her shoulders, her heartbeats started to run faster and she breathed deeply. Although this was not new to her, still, every time it didn’t fail to make her feel nervous as the way he looked at her, his intense sight was enough to give her Goosebumps.

Finally, he pulled down the bathrobe that fell in her feet, leaving her all naked in front of him. Lu Qiang moved his sight along her body from head to toe but he didn’t try to do anything. Going through her clothes, he took out her undergarments first and handed her over the panty with another tiny piece of clothing in his hands.

He held it in front of her, signaling her to put her hands inside it. Jiang Yuyan asked him to stop and first, she wore her panty. Then she put her hands in the belts and Lu Qiang pulled it in front of her chest.

Moving to stand behind her to hook the cloth, securely, he placed a kiss on her shoulder, once he was done. He sniffed into her nape, “You smell so seductive that it’s making me feels like to take you here at this moment.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan exhaled through her mouth, “But we are not....”

“I know. I will wait for you to come back to our home.”
Saying it he pulled the dress from the bed and helped her to wear it, “How many days I have to wait for you?”

“Not much. I will be back soon.”

“Let’s get married tomorrow and live together in our home. I don’t want to stay away from you even for a single moment now.”

“As you say. I am ready to do it whenever you want.” Jiang Yuyan felt the same as him. He liked what she said, “I am glad that you are ready. Just in the next few months, we would be officially husband and wife.”

“Hmm!” she nodded with a pleasant smile on her face but soon it replaced with scared expressions as Lu Qiang whispered in her ears, “And soon, there will be a moment when you will be completely mine.” She understood what he meant by that and moved her face back to look into his eyes. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

“Did I scare you?” he asked

“No! It was so sudden....”

Lu Qiang kissed her on the forehead, “I understand. Now let’s go out before your nosy brother came here.”

She laughed to hear it, “Hmm! Give a minute.” Jiang Yuyan went in front of a mirror, did her stuff and was ready to go while Lu Qiang was observing her every move with love in his eyes for her.

As they went downstairs, Jiang Yang was already there, “You guys finished early. I thought I will have to wait for long.”

“Stop it, Jiang Yang.” Mo Ruolan came to the living room and saw her son teasing them again. She looked at Lu Qiang with a smile on her face, “Have a sit Lu Qiang.”

After talking for a while, Lu Qiang left Jiang Residence, declining the offer to have dinner with Jiangs. As he came out of the elevator and sat inside his car, he dialed a number on his cell phone, “Where are you?”

293 Worried For The Friend...

After talking for a while, Lu Qiang left Jiang Residence, declining the offer to have dinner with Jiangs. As he came out of the elevator and sat inside his car, he dialed a number on his cell phone, "Where are you?"

The person on the other line, "Dealing with some important stuff. Is there anything important?"

"Yes!" Lu Qiang replied with a serious tone.

"What is it?"

"Not on the phone call. We need to meet right now."

"Where are you?" The person on the other line asked.

"Jiang residence," Lu Qiang replied.

"I am far from there so it will take time."

"Hmm! Get back home early and let's talk after dinner."

Saying it Lu Qiang cut the call. Turning on the engine of the car, Lu Qiang left in a hurry.

Lu Feng was busy with his work while going through the documents of one company whose head came to him for his expertise. He was sitting in a dark with his face not visible and only light was on the table to allow him to see the documents clearly, Just as he was done going through it, his phone rang and it was Lu Qiang's number, flashing on it. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

It was rare that Lu Qiang or Lu Feng had to call each other suddenly until it is something really important. Lu Feng kept everything on the side and received the call. He was far away on the other side of the city so he agreed to meet Lu Qiang in the Lu Mansion.

Hearing Lu Qiang, Lu Feng thought what might be so urgent that Lu Qiang called him suddenly and asked to meet him as soon as possible. Lu Feng sidelined his work and gave a quick solution to the person about the difficulty his company was facing and he was in preparation to leave the place.

“Mr. YF, we haven’t discussed your payment.” The head called him.

“No need. Take it as a small favor from me.” Saying it Lu Feng left the place in a hurry.

The head was in a surprise that how easily and fast Lu Feng gone through the documents and gave him a solution and left without taking anything in a return.

The assistant of the head was standing next to him, looking at the figure left from the dark side of the room, not being able to see his face, “Sir, what was this person? Gave solution in a minute and left without even asking for money.”

“Though we couldn’t see his face, I am sure he is someone extraordinary person and one day we would be able to see him at the top position where people like us wouldn’t be able to reach him.” The head replied while looking at the dark side of the room.

In Lu Mansion, during a dinner, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were sitting quietly while eating. Once the dinner was over, Lu Qiang signaled Lu Feng to come to the garden.

When Lu Feng went to the lawn, Lu Qiang was already waiting for him while looking at the waterfall there. He looked like in deep thought.

Lu Feng went to Lu Qiang and stood beside him, looking at the same waterfall, “What’s the matter?”

Lu Qiang didn’t run around the bush and straight went to the point, “Jiang Yang and the girl is interested in.”

“Nixxie!” Lu Feng got why Lu Qiang was so serious.

Lu Qiang nodded, “Hmm! I am sure that moron will definitely do something that he should not.”

“I know!” Lu Feng was also sure about what Lu Qiang said.

“Why didn’t you tell me then?” Lu Qiang asked.

“I tried my best to stop him but you know him well. When it comes to being stubborn, he is worse than us.” Lu Feng looked tensed too just as Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang gave out a deep sigh and said, “That’s why I am worried.”

“I told him to stay away from her.”

“Hmm! Me too but there is no use, I guess.”

“That girl is really good but the family.....” Lu Feng stopped to remember something from the past.

Lu Qiang was aware of what Lu Feng was thinking about and said, “After the death of Xi Guo. I don’t want anyone of us to get involved with that family. All our relations ended with that family with his death.”

Hearing the name Xi Guo, Lu Feng had sad expressions on his face, “Hmm! I can understand as I still regret not being able to save him. That bastard Xi Cheng, he is not the easy person to handle.”

“We know he killed Xi Guo, but there was nothing we could do.” Lu Qiang too had the same sad and regretful expressions on his face.

“I wish, I could do something but I had no other option and we were too young to do anything,” said Lu Feng.

“That girl, I hope she is doing well. I saw her with Yuyan and she looked fine. I didn’t stop Yuyan from talking to her as I thought; I can at least do this for the sake of our late friend.” Lu Qiang said.

“You did well. She needs a friend because she is lonely. After Xi Guo’s death, I was keeping an eye on her for some time to check if she was in any kind of danger but when I found she would be safe, I stopped it.”

“Why not, as she had a major share of the property on her name transferred by her mother and if something happened to her, everything will go to the charity.” Lu Qiang was aware of

the inside secrets of most of the business family, “Her mother created a shield to protect her so she would be safe.”

“I heard it. That’s good at least they can’t hurt her.” Lu Feng was relieved to hear that news too as he used to be worried about her as Nixxie was the sister of his deceased friend.

294 Lu Feng And His Mother...

“Why not, as she held the major share of the property under her name, transferred by her mother and if something happened to her, everything will go to the charity.” Lu Qiang was aware of the inside secrets of most of the business family, “Her mother created a shield to protect her so that her only child would be safe. After the death of her only son, Xi Guo, her mother is more careful about Nixxixie.”

“I heard it. That’s good at least they can’t hurt her.” Lu Feng was relieved to hear that news too as he used to be worried about her as Nixxixie was the sister of his deceased friend.

“But they won’t let her part away from the family and she had to be with them all her life. I think they will try to harm her in another way than killing,” Said Lu Qiang

Lu Feng agreed, “Yup! As she holds the most important business under her name, They will find different ways.”

Lu Qiang pinched the space between his eyebrows and gave out a deep sigh, “This idiot, Jiang Yang. We have to keep an eye on him.”

“Yeah! We should bother our most trusted man for it,” said Lu Feng.

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng, “I guess it’s time to use him again.”

Lu Feng nodded, “Let’s call him tomorrow.”

Both talked for a while and went back to Lu Mansion. On the way back, both saw Su Hui who was standing near the entrance of the Lu Mansion, looking at both of them. As they reached near her, she said with a smile on her face, “Good to see both brothers getting along well together.”

Lu Qiang didn’t react and left to go inside the mansion, while Lu Feng stayed back, “Stop thinking too much, mother.”

Hearing it, the smile on her face disappeared but still she maintained her calm, “Thinking too much? Huh? I was happy for both of you to see you together like in the past.”

“Nothing can be like in the past. We were just talking about Jiang Yang as he is a friend of both of us,” Lu Feng replied.

Su Hui didn't want to give up, “But it would be nice if both of you get back together. Also, I saw you are getting along with him well for the last few months and I expect you to continue it.”

Though Lu Feng and Lu Qiang avoided getting noticed by others, they couldn't hide it from Su Hui's sharp and well-observing gaze.

“Don't miss understand the things and don't ever expect anything from me,” Lu Feng gave her a cold reply.

“Expecting to see my son at the position that he deserves, is that a sin?” Su Hui asked.

Lu Feng looked straight onto his mother's eyes and said coldly, “Desiring for something that never belonged to you, is a sin.”

Su Hui felt annoyed to hear it and asked, “Why it doesn't belong to us, after all, we too are Lu.”

“Having the last name doesn't make one deserving. Moreover, this everything was build up by uncle Lu Jinhai alone so it never belonged to us.” Lu Feng's words made Su Hui even more annoyed as she didn't want to accept the fact that it was the hard work of Lu Jinhai alone.

“Your father too gave his blood and sweat to everything we have and whatever there is in the family, the most deserving person should lead it and you know well who is more capable to lead Lu Corporation.” She tried to defend her words.

“No one is deserving that Lu Qiang and he proved it by taking Lu Corporation to new heights,” he argued.

“You know well that you...”

Lu Feng frowned to hear it as he knew what his mother was going to say but it was the thing he would never want to think

about, in his entire life. Taking Lu Qiang's place was not even among the last thing he could do before he dies. "Seeing at you still the same, you are making me feel that we are not Lu, Mother"

"What did I do?" she exclaimed.

"You can't understand it, mother and it's good that you are not able to do so." Saying it he left to go inside, leaving his mother puzzled.

"Lu Feng, what do you mean by that?" Su Hui asked to look at his retreating back but there was no reply.

As Lu Feng entered inside, he saw Lu Qiang was standing there. Lu Feng startled to see him, "Don't you know, eavesdropping is a bad thing?"

"I know! Let me be bad and tell me what that was?" Lu Qiang ignored how displeased Lu Feng was to see him there. Lu Qiang didn't plan to hear their conversation but as he heard few words from their conversation, he couldn't hold back from listening to the whole thing.

"Nothing! Ms. Su Hui is losing her mind again." Lu Feng replied.

"What happened between both of you that you don't talk to your own mother and even if you do, you always sound like you are upset with her?"

Lu Qiang always had a question in his mind, why this mamma's boy suddenly started to hate his mother and why he was so bitter to her but Lu Feng was a tight-lipped person and he didn't want to tell this to anyone.

Hearing it, Lu Feng pinched the space between his eyebrows in annoyance, "Lu Qiang!"

"Huh?" Lu Qiang was ready to hear him.

Lu Feng stared in his eyes with a serious expression on his face, "As I am back with you like in the past, don't make me go back to where you and Jiang Yang pulled me back. So stop asking the questions that I can't answer you." "Find authorized

novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience ,
Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

“Is it that difficult?” Lu Qiang asked.

Lu Feng nodded with the same serious expressions on his face,
“Hmm! And don’t make it even more difficult for me.”

“I understand! Let’s go to our rooms.” Lu Qiang knew, when
Lu Feng talk like this being way too serious that means he
won’t utter a single word and it was not a good thing to force
him to answer.

Lu Feng nodded and both left to their rooms.

296 Hiding Behind The Mask...

Jiang Yang leaned back in a chair and said while being relaxed, “I keep my professional and personal matters separate.”

“Huh?” Nixxie didn’t understand what he meant.

Seeing the big question mark on her forehead Jiang replied to her unspoken question, “Your mother is my patient and when I came to check her, it was my professional matter and you belong to my personal matter.”

“Me? Personal matter?” Nixxie was puzzled to hear it. When did she become his personal matter as they haven’t talked properly, even for once?

Jiang Yang nodded, “Hmm! As I like you, you belong to my personal matter. Isn’t it fair?”

“Cough-Cough!” What he said was like someone threw a bomb on her.

Seeing her coughing with the shock she just got now, Jiang Yang smiled and passed her water bottle. She accepted it and as she had a sip, he spoke again.

“Why I am feeling like you are a different person from how I saw you at the university?”

Nixxie drank water and calmed herself down, “You are mistaken.”

“Is that so?” He didn’t stress on it much as he saw she was not willing to talk about it.

Before Jiang Yang could say or ask her something else, she stood up from the chair, “I should take a leave now.”

“Why? Are you scared?” he asked sarcastically.

Hearing it she stopped in her place and asked to look at him, “Why should I?”

“As I said, I like you, you are running away.” He replied looking up at her while sitting in his chair calmly.

“I came here to see the doctor of my mother and as I finished discussing important stuff, I will take a leave.” Saying it, she left Jiang Yang’s cabin. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

Once she left he spoke to himself, “I think the destiny wants us to be together that’s why we met here like this, Nixxxie.” He leaned back in the chair and said with his eyes closed, “Sorry my friends but I think I really like her.”

As Nixxxie left his cabin, she went straight to the washroom. She washed her face to calm herself down. She was scared and tensed too. The strong and arrogant looking girl was different this time like what she looked outside was the mask wore by her.

Her legs and hands were shaking with her eyes closed, standing in front of a mirror. It was a fear of getting caught by someone and she didn’t want it. She wanted to keep wearing that mask, showing she was very strong.

Opening her eyes Nixxxie looked in the mirror. She looked like she had lots of things in her mind but at the same time, she looked helpless with teary eyes. She stood there for a while looking at herself blankly. She cleaned her face and went back to the VIP patient’s room.

She sat on the couch in the room while staring at her mother, who was breathing but looked more like a lifeless body. Tears rolled down from her eyes, “I am sorry, mother. I am helpless. I wish brother Xi Guo was alive and he would be here with us.”

Same-day in the morning after breakfast, Lu Feng and Lu Qiang both left the Lu Mansion. Lu Feng remembered what he and Lu Qiang talked about last night and called him from his

car. He wore a Bluetooth earphone and waited for Lu Qiang to receive a call,

Lu Qiang saw, Lu Feng's number flashing on his screen and answered it, "Tell me."

"I called to ask if you remember what we decided last night."

"About using San Zemin to keep an eye on Jiang Yang?" Lu Qiang asked.

"Hmm!"

"Yeah, I am going to do it once I am in the office. I instructed Xiao Min to call him there."

"Okay! Good to know it. See you later."

"Hmm!" Saying it both cut the calls and went to their destinations.

There was something, these two brothers were worried about when it came to the Xi family and they wanted to take measures before something bad could happen. They knew Jiang Yang, if he liked that girl and felt something about her in his heart, he will go to her.

Most importantly, if he will get to know about her condition, then it was impossible to stop him. He will definitely try to help her and get her out of it, even though it won't be possible for him. He never cared about what might happen to him.

When Lu Qiang went to the office, Xiao Min was waiting for him in the reception. When both entered the lift Xiao Min spoke, "San Zemin is going to be here in fifteen minutes."

"Hmm!"

Lu Qiang was working in his office, just then there was a knock on the door and the tall man in a black suit entered the office along with Xiao Min.

Lu Qiang looked at them as they walked towards him.

"Good morning president Lu." The tall man in a black suit spoke.

“Morning, San Zemin” Saying it Lu Qiang signaled him to have a sit.

San Zemin sat in the chair, “I am glad that you need me again after so many years and I can be useful to you.”

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and said, “I am glad that like in the past, you are here again to help me.”

San Zemin was an ex-military man. He was good at spying and had his own team of trained people. He was in his late thirties and looked amazingly impressive. Black hair with golden color highlights, deep black eyes, long and sharp nose with a square jawline. His build was strong and muscular.

Lu Qiang met him after his father’s accident through Lu Jinhai’s assistant and Xiao Min’s father, Xiao-Dong. He helped Lu Qiang to get the secrets of so many people who were opposing Lu Qiang to lead this company and tried to covet his father’s hard work.

Dear readers, this month I didn’t add more chapters in the privileged subscription system so that I can give mass release every Sunday and to be able to update at least more than one chapter a day.. It’s kinda loss for me so if you want to support the author in another way you can (not compulsory at all, only if you are willing to).. XOXO

You can buy me a kofi here-

<https://Ko-fi.com/mynovel20>

Or you can paypal me-

<https://www.paypal.me/mynoveltwenty>

297 To Keep An Eye On Him...

Lu Qiang met San Zemin after his father's accident through Lu Jinhai's assistant and Xiao Min's father, Xiao Dong. He helped Lu Qiang to get the secrets of so many people who were opposing Lu Qiang to lead this company and tried to covet his father's hard work.

Using those secrets, Lu Qiang made them shut their mouths. He turned a few of them to his side and those who were rotten to keep on his side, he got rid of them. Along with those people, Lu Qiang got to know the reason behind his father's accident but he had to keep his mouth shut because of certain reasons. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

Other than Lu Qiang, only San Zemin and Xiao Dong were aware of this fact and they respected Lu Qiang's decision to turn a blind eye on the matter of his own father's accident. Once Lu Jinhai was completely alright, he too wished the same what Lu Qiang did.

"So what is the matter this time? Is someone annoying you again?" San Zemin asked.

"This time it is about to protect someone," Lu Qiang replied with serious expressions on his face.

Noticing the seriousness on Lu Qiang's face and his voice, San Zemin understood how important the matter and that someone was. "As you called me personally here, I guess that someone is very important to you."

Lu Qiang nodded. "He is and I want you to keep eye on him as well as protect him if he is any kind of trouble."

"I will. Rest assured."

“Right now it’s nothing serious as per what I know but knowing my stubborn friend he might call trouble upon himself so for now give me updates about him.”

“Okay! But may I know from whom you are planning to protect him and you think he might be in danger,” San Zemin asked.

“Xi family and especially Xi Cheng,” Lu Qiang replied.

Hearing the name Xi Cheng, the expressions on San Zemin’s face changed and he said, “It’s bad news.”

“I know, so you can understand why I am so worried about him.”

Having serious and worried expressions on his face, San Zemin nodded, “Hmm! I understand and knowing Xi Cheng there is only one thing that he is interested in and that is his family business, power, and money. To get all these things, only one hurdle he has and that’s his stepsister.”

San Zemin had inside information about all the business families and he was the source of what Lu Qiang knew about those families and helped him to deal with them.

Most of the time Lu Qiang and San Zemin got to know what might happen in those families because of the greed of power and all the time they couldn’t help but turn blind eye to those matters.

Lu Qiang had only one regret in his life that he couldn’t protect his friend Xi Guo, Nixxxie’s elder brother and Xi families elder son who was going to be the heir of Xi family’s business. Again this time, someone dear to him was following the same route and he wanted to protect him whatever it takes.

“Absolutely right San Zemin and now you can think what might be the case,” Lu Qiang spoke.

“That poor girl. What can we do other than keeping ourselves away from them?” Knowing Nixxxie’s real condition, San Zemin always felt bad about her. Moreover, he knew her brother, Xi Guo through Lu Qiang and he was aware of Xi Guo was one good person.

“That’s why I am trying to keep Jiang Yang away from the trouble that he is not aware of and even if I will try to keep him away from that girl, he won’t listen if he really likes her.”

“Okay! I will start my work today.”

“That would be better. Xiao Min will give you the file with all the information about him in it.”

“Hmm!” saying it, San Zemin took a leave. Xiao Min went out to see him off and to give him the file that he required.

Lu Qiang called Lu Feng, “Done with a thing.”

“That’s good. Now, we need to get our friend’s thoughts to work in a proper direction” Lu Feng replied.

In the evening when Jiang Yang went back home, he went to Jiang Yuyan’s room after freshening up. Jiang Yuyan was busy in her art room after so long and planned to draw something. Jiang Yang sat in one chair while Jiang Yuyan was fixing a canvas on the stand.

Looking at his sister who was trying hard to fix the canvas, Jiang Yang said, “Your friend Nixxie, her mom had surgery.”

Hearing it, Jiang Yuyan stopped and turned to look at her brother, “Nixxie’s mom? When? I didn’t know. What happened?”

“Yesterday, I operated on her mother,” he replied.

“Ohh That’s why she didn’t come to university and she didn’t receive my call even.”

“She is in the hospital with her mother.”

“How is her mother?” Jiang Yuyan asked.

“She is out of danger now. But Nixxie....”

“What about her?” Jiang Yuyan asked and started to do again what she was doing.

Jiang Yang stood up from the chair and went to Jiang Yuyan to help her fix a canvas. “Have you found anything strange about her or she has any kind of problem.”

Jiang Yuyan stopped and thought about something to hear her brother. Though she ignored a few things about Nixxxie before but now she started to collect them in her mind.

“Now I think about it, she is not what she shows from outside. She just pretends to be strong and rude. I can see she is scared inside somewhere but why I don’t know.”

“I thought so too and I know my sister has good eyes to know the person.” As they finished fixing the canvas, Jiang Yang spoke again, “It’s done. Now you can draw.”

“Thanks, brother.” Saying it Jiang Yuyan went back to where the conversation stopped, “But why are you asking about her suddenly?”

298 Sensing Something Unusual...

“But why are you asking about her suddenly?” Jiang Yuyan asked curiously

“Nothing, I was just being curious to know about her. You know me well when it comes to a girl.” Saying it Jiang Yang went to the stands where colors and brushes were arranged in a proper and accessible way.

He pulled out few brushes and signaled her to ask which one, to it, Jiang Yuyan replied, “left one” and resumed the conversation.

“This time you are not like how you deal with other girls. You seem different, so can I take it as you like her.”

Jiang Yang moved to the shelf having color boxes on it and replied, “Hmm! Yeah! She is different from other girls I saw till now and there is something that is pulling me towards her when I don’t want to.”

“I see. Well, she is pretty.” Saying it, Jiang Yuyan followed him to the shelf to grab few colors.

Pulling out a few boxes, Jiang Yang replied, “She is but that’s not the reason. You know I am not the kind of a person to go behind the looks of a girl.”

“Really?” saying it sarcastically, Jiang Yuyan took the color box from his hands and stepped back to her place.

Jiang Yang understood her sarcastic remark. “Well, there were moments like that but that was just to pass the time, nothing serious at all.” Saying it grabbed the apron hanged on the stand near to the shelf and went to his sister.

She opened the color box and pulled out the tiny containers from it. “I know. You were serious about only one girl till now and you have to break up with her because of me.”

Jiang Yang went to her, put an apron on her and moved to her backside to tie it up, “Don’t blame yourself. I think that happened for the best as in the future we might not have been together because I never planned to stay in the USA forever and she wouldn’t have come to China.”

Jiang Yuyan stood still to let him tie the apron properly and replied, “Then, it’s fine and also you have found a new love interest now, my friend Nixxxie.”

Once he was done securing her apron, he gave out a deep sigh and said, “Not yet. Seeing at the scenario, it would be hard to make her fall for anyone.”

Jiang Yuyan turned to look at her brother, “Hmm! Keep trying. Same applied to me too, but Lu Qiang made it possible.”

“Yeah! If my sister can fall in love then anyone in the world can.” Saying it he patted her head.

The next day after going to the hospital, Jiang Yang was excited to see Nixxxie but he was aware that it was his work time and he had to do it seriously. When he went to the VIP patient’s room to check her mother, Nixxxie was not there. Instead, the same old lady from the day of her surgery was sitting on the couch.

Running his sight across the room to search for her, he went to the patient. When Jiang Yang was checking the patient, suddenly visitors came in. An old man in his late fifties with one young man in his late twenties entered inside. They looked like a family of the patient. Both men were wearing a stylish business suit that showed they were rich and not any normal people.

Jiang Yang ignored it and continued to check the patient. Those men too didn’t disturb Jiang Yang and stayed silent. Once he was done, the older man asked, “How is she doing doctor?”

“She is doing fine for now, but she is a very weak and we have to take proper care of her,” Jiang Yang replied.

The old man gave out a deep sigh, “Hmm! These women are careless sometimes with their healths.”

The young man beside him put his hand on the old man's shoulders and said, "Don't worry father, she would be fine as we are here to take care of her." "Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

"No need! I can take care of my mother. Don't bother yourself with it." That was Nixxie who came back to the room and saying it she stood beside her mother as she didn't want those men to go near her.

The Young man was calm but in his grey eyes there was a mischievous grin, "Little sister, you are still very young. Leave it to me."

Hearing it, Nixxie raised her voice, "Brother Xi Cheng, I am not a kid anymore. I can look after my mother."

Before Xi Cheng could say anything, Jiang Yang spoke, "I think, for now, having fewer people around the patient would be better and the one whom the patient is close to should be here so it will be better for the patient."

Seeing the way she reacted, protective towards her mother and the way she looked anxious to him, he was sure she didn't want anyone to be with her mother but her.

"Doctor is right Xi Cheng. Let your sister be here." The older man looked at Nixxie and said, "Take good care of your mother, if there is anything, inform my assistant."

"Hmm!" Nixxie just nodded.

"I will take leave then." Saying it an older man turned while Xi Cheng looked at Nixxie, staring in her eyes and grinned, "Take care little sister." Nixxie didn't respond to him and turned her face in another direction. Jiang Yang noticed it and realized something was wrong.

Jiang Yang understood something was not right in this family and Nixxie was affected with this. To him, she looked more of a helpless girl who is struggling in her life. He wanted to ask her but that was not the right time as he was doing his duty as a doctor, not a family counselor. Moreover, he doubted that she will tell him anything.

When those two men left, Nixxie looked at Jiang Yang and understood he had noticed something and felt awkward.

299 Silent Start Of A Love....

When those two men from her family left, Nixxie looked at Jiang Yang and understood, he had noticed something that he should not and felt awkward.

Jiang Yang didn't say a word and left with his assistants. He had surgeries that day so he was busy, the whole day to come and take a follow up on her mother

In the evening, instead of Jiang Yang, another doctor came to take a follow up of Nixxie's mother. She was surprised to see a new doctor and asked, "Is Doctor Jiang Yang not handling the case of my mother?"

"Ms. Xi, doctor Jiang Yang is busy with surgeries today so he won't be free till late night that's why I am here to take a follow up in his stead," The new doctor replied and stepped forward to check the patient.

"Okay!" saying it she sat calmly on the couch, letting them do their work. Looking at the doctor's white apron, she thought about Jiang Yang and her heart started to race a bit faster. She picked up a water bottle from the table in front of a couch and emptied out half of it in her stomach to make herself calm as not understanding what was happening to her.

It was late at night when Jiang Yang was free from emergency surgeries. When he came back to his cabin, he went through the reports of the patients he couldn't take follow up in the evening, though he was dead tired. He saw the reports of Mrs. Xi and thought to visit her before he leaves the hospital.

More than the patient, he wanted to see Nixxie and why he felt like it, he himself didn't know. As Mrs. Xi was a VIP patient, no one would have noticed why he was going to check the patient at this hour as everyone cared more about the VIPs.

When Jiang Yang went to the VIP patient's room, the nurse was just coming out after changing the IV drip of the patient

and she saw Jiang Yang. Seeing him, she bowed to him and opened the door for him to enter inside.

“You can do your stuff. I will handle it myself.” The nurse was on her round to check on the patients so she obeyed and left.

Entering the room Jiang Yang saw, Lights were off but in the dim light from the night lamp, he could see that Nixxxie was sleeping soundly on the couch. He smiled to see her and went to her mother to check her without turning on lights as it was not that dark. Finishing his work, he was about to leave the room, but noticed, the quilt that Nixxxie was covering herself with was on half on the floor leaving her uncovered and she looked like she was feeling cold.

Stepping in her direction, he lifted the quilt and covered her properly with it. He noticed how innocent and calm she was looking while sleeping and remembered how tensed she looked when two men from her family were there to visit her mother. She looked scared and lost at that moment. He felt sad for her, deep down in his heart as he could feel what she was feeling.

Now she looked away from all the worries in the world. Jiang Yang felt something in his heart to see her and patted her head with care as he wanted her not be worried about anything and he was there for her.

Jiang Yang left the room without making a sound. Once the door was closed, Nixxxie opened her eyes. The moment she heard Jiang Yang’s voice when he was talking to the nurse, she was awake but she pretended to be asleep.

Why she did it, she couldn’t understand but she was affected by what he said to her in his cabin that ‘he liked her’. No one ever dared said something like to her because she was a bird locked in a cage created by her family.

Nixxxie could sense, he was coming in her direction after checking her mother but still didn’t open her eyes. The way he covered her with a quilt and patted her head she felt nice. She didn’t feel as to why he was doing it instead she wished him to continue it. It was not a thing to be done by a doctor so it was

obvious that he was being more than just a doctor of her mother.

Once Jiang Yang left, Nixxxie touched her own forehead where he touched her while patting as she could still feel the warmth of his hand there. Closing her eyes she felt that warmth until it disappeared completely with her heart beating faster.

Not being able to sleep, she continued thinking about him but the next moment she shook her head and said to herself, “Idiot, you are not allowed to think about anyone. Don’t forget it.” Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

Frowning on herself, she closed her eyes but even after trying so hard, she couldn’t stop thinking about him neither she could sleep.

Days passed like this when Jiang Yang continued to visit her mother and Nixxxie used to watch him silently. Most of the time when Jiang Yang visited her mother in the night, though, for him, it was just an excuse to see Nixxxie, he didn’t miss the chance to pat her head and keep looking at her calm face for few moments and leave the room. It was like his fixed protocol to do.

All this time Nixxxie was aware of his actions but not even once she tried to stop him. For her, the protocol of Jiang Yang’s visit was the same and she didn’t want to break it. The day whenever Jiang Yang couldn’t come to check on her mother during day time, it was obvious for her to understand that he will come at midnight in the room and he will do what he always did.

It was a silent start of their love.....

300 Unexpected Kiss...

Jiang Yang and Nixxie both started to like each other in their own silent way. They used to talk only during his visit to her mother. Whenever he talked to her about her mother's health progress, Nixxie couldn't help but stare at his face, like she was in a daze. This handsome doctor was slowly making his way to her heart but she didn't want to accept it.

Jiang Yang was aware of her changed behavior but he never showed he noticed it. Most of the time he caught her staring at him but he always showed he didn't and he was busy with her mother's reports. He used to smile once he was away from her thinking about how she was looking at him.

One day something unexpected happened. In midnight, after being free from his work Jiang Yang went to check on Nixxie's mother as an excuse to see Nixxie. Once he was done with his doctor's duty, as usual, he stepped towards Nixxie who was sleeping on a couch. Find authorized novels in Webnovel , faster updates, better experience , Please click www.webnovel.com for visiting.

This time he didn't pat her head and instead leaned down towards her with the support of his right hand resting on the backrest of the couch while the other one was resting on the couch beside her head and pecked on her rosy pink and soft lips.

He felt the touch of her soft lips with his eyes closed and stayed like that for a few moments. Nixxie opened her eyes in a shock but didn't move. She gulped to feel his lips on hers and his mint breath on her skin. In a while, Jiang Yang parted away from her lips to look into her eyes.

It was the first time when he was looking into her pretty and bright eyes so closely and they were looking even prettier in dim light and with the shock she just had. Both looked into each other's eyes but there was no word to say.

Seeing no reaction from her, Jiang Yang caressed her cheek with the fingers of his left hand but there was no unwillingness on her face. Jiang Yang moved closer to her lips again while staring in her eyes, still caressing her cheeks. In the next moment, their lips met again.

Nixxie could feel his hot and minty breath with his soft lips seeking hers to taste her. It was the first time when a man was so close to her and he was kissing her. Her heart was beating faster with this new feeling but she wanted it.

Jiang Yang slowly started to suck her top lip, realizing, she was not resisting him. While kissing, he sat on the edge of the couch and started to kiss her slowly, sucking and nibbling her both lips. Nixxie didn't know what to do as it was her first time kissing someone so she just let him do it.

Jiang Yang was gentle not being in a rush. The kiss continued for a while until when Jiang Yang felt to let her breath. He parted away from her lips to look into her hazy eyes. Both were panting and wanted to continue it but it was a hospital and not the place to do these things when her mother was lying there on a bed after struggling for her life.

Nixxie didn't know how to react as not knowing why she kissed him and how she could do it with the man she didn't even know properly. Moreover, she was feeling shy and embarrassed.

Jiang Yang caressed her forehead with the care and love for her in his eyes as knowing what she was thinking at the moment. He leaned down again but this time just to whisper in her ear, "Goodnight, princess. Have a nice sleep." Saying it, he kissed her on her forehead, stood up looking into her eyes with a smile on his face and left the room.

Nixxie was still in a shock with what just happened. To make it sure, she touched her lips which were still moist with saliva because of the kiss she just shared. Once she heard the sound of the door closing as a sign of his leave, she clenched the quilt in her hands and closed her eyes to sleep, though it was not possible at least for a night.

Jiang Yang left the room with a ghost smile on his face and just as he entered his cabin, he closed the door and kept his hands on his faster-beating heart while standing with his back resting to the door for the support. “Seems like, this cardiologist is suffering from the heart problem.” Exhaling through his mouth, he looked towards his chest and with his hands on his heart he spoke again, “Stop it, man, why are you running so faster. Calm down.”

Collecting his stuff from the cabin, Jiang Yang went back home and on the way, while driving he was just smiling to think about how and what he just did.

Once he reached home and lied in a bed after freshening up, he was thinking about her and their first kiss with a smile on his face. He was not able to sleep and continued changing sides in a bed in a hope to see her again soon. As not being able to sleep, Jiang Yang went to the balcony and stood near the railing while feeling the cool breeze against his face.

Just then he heard a voice, “Are you not able to sleep?”

On the other side, Nixxxie was in the same condition as his. She was not able to sleep too and continued changing her sides with the thought of she just had her first kiss and she couldn't get that sweet feeling out of her mind. Unable to sleep, she stepped out of the couch and stood near the window of the room, while blankly looking at the starry sky.

It was going to be a sleepless night for both of them.

This is the 300th chapter of this novel. On the occasion of completing the triple century and coming so far with you guys, I would like all my readers to write a review on this novel saying what you actually feel and think about it. Write a few lines and I would be happy to see it.

(Note: spamming is not allowed.. ;) Don't write a review without any words and having just smileys and hearts in it. There is no meaning to such review.)